

Falling into Place

By : **Kirkyb**

Life catches up with you and all you can do is get the hell out of Dodge before all hell breaks loose... Well all hell had broken loose and Megan Miller was swept up and dropped off in the middle of nowhere. Never been one to back down from anything maybe this time it might be her only choice, small towns don't let Outsiders in very easily... this may be her hardest task getting people to see her as something other than the girl from the city can she keep her past in the past or will she always be on the outside



Published on
Booksie

booksie.com/Kirkyb

Copyright © Kirkyb, 2013

Publish your writing on Booksie.com.

Table of Contents

Falling into Place Chapter 1

Ice Princess

Onion Creek Horse ranch

New life

Ranch talk

Raw nerves

Safety net

Another shock

Educated Cowboy

Kain's Calling

Temper and a tramp

Much needed call

Cowboy at the door

Run it off

Bar job

Mixed signals

On the bar

Hot or not

Bed time

head to head

naked in the bathroom, and in the bed

Suspicion

Falling into Place

TALKING TO A HORSE!!!!

Cowboy's choice

Mixed emotion

Losing my mind

Hot and not so much....

Table turned and gone wrong

Tantrum throwing Cowboy and trouble ahead

Side of a Bullet

Unraveling

An Allie???

Louisville slugger

Part of the secret comes out

Confusion and worry

GOGGLE

Not running... yet

How it started with Kain

Pulled over

Reeled in

tough choices

Another bombshell

held in place

opening up

So good then so bad

spanked

Nurse Megan

Shocked a few people

Falling into Place

Nursing duties

Damn Cowboy

HEATED

Take out the trash

Morning after the night before

Exhaustion is a killer

Boys will be boys

restless dreams

Falling into Place Chapter 57

Oh crap

Safety fist

Dinner

Damn it

shocking Blake

Full story

tail spin

His choice

Blakes in trouble

Apron strings

So damn tired

Facing off

WHAT THE HELL

tied in the barn

Green eyed monster

Resolve

Falling into Place : Chapter 1

..... How does a girl end up feeling like cattle going to market? Well you sit her on a Greyhound Bus for 30 hours 34 minutes that's how, listening to life stories of people you didn't know and really didn't care about, while being trapped in your own thoughts. San Antonio was the last city I saw the heat was like the devil was getting his bake on and it was after midnight. I stretched hearing every muscle in my body scream in pain at the stretching and twisting. I looked round and smiled at the hum of the city. But this wasn't my final destinationâ ! No I was now heading for a cab to some place called Wimberley. I picked up my bag and walked over to a row of cabs.

"Where'd you like to go Miss" one of the driver smiled a broad smile his cowboy hat tipped back on his head.

"Wimberley" I pulled a face

"Well Missy you know that's over forty miles from here don'tcha?"

"No I didn't but it's almost one am and I ain't slept for shit and I want to get to the place I'm staying before dawn" I hated being tired it wore at my last nerve

'well you go the money to pay for it?" I pulled \$100 bill from my pocket and waved it at him

"I have the money and don't think about trying to rob me it's all I have got for now" I pulled open the cab door and threw in my bags and got in after them. The driver got in and turned the key in the ignition and pulled away.

"So you don't sound like you're from here?"

"I'm not" I looked out of the window and wound it down letting the breeze blow over me

"So where you coming from and you got family out here?" he looked at me through the mirror

"I'm a mid west girl and Nope just me"

"You do know Wimberley is back of beyond and then some right?"

"Nope I didn't' but I do now" I pinched the bridge of my nose, all I wanted was a hot shower and a bed right now and all of those were waiting at the end of this cab ride.

"My Grandpa was from a place not far from Wimberleyâ !blahâ ! blahâ ! blahâ !" his voice droned and melded with the country music that seemed to ooze from everywhere in the car. I must have drifted off to sleep because next thing I knew was "Miss hey honey we're here" The driver had turned round in his seat and was looking at me "We're here" I rubbed my eyes and sat up I could see a few bars dotted down the main street. I reached into my pocket and pulled out the folded paper I'd gotten with my 'instructions" as to where I was going.

"Can you drop me off at the Wimberley Inn I guess I'm staying there for tonight" I yawned

"Yes Miss" he nodded and pulled back onto the street taking me to the inn I handed him the hundred and got out. I pulled out my bags

Falling into Place

"Thanks"

"Need help with the bags?"

"No thank you I got it" I slung my back pack on to my shoulder and grabbed the other bag and walked up the steps and walked inside the coolness of the air-conditioning a welcome relief from the heat outside.

"Well Howdy" and woman walked out of a room on the left "You must be Megan"

"Yes Ma'am" I nodded trying to stifle a yawn

"Well honey, your room is ready for you and a package came here for you today as well I put it on the bed"

"For me?"

Yes" she nodded and grabbed a key from the rack on the wall "this way" she started up the stairs, it felt like the longest walk ever, she opened the door at the end of the hall to a chintz pretty room with floral over kill there was a large envelope on top of the bed "well sleep well honey breakfast is from seven till nine in the dining room downstairs. Oh and welcome to Wimberley" she walked out and closed the door I put my bags down and walked into the bathroom and turned on the shower.

I pulled off my t-shirt and dropped it on the floor the rest of my clothes soon following it. The hot water was like heaven releasing the knotted muscles and washing away the grime from over a day of traveling. I shut off the water and wrapped in a towel and headed for the bed. I sat down and curled up my legs and reached for the envelope with my name printed on the front of it. I tipped out the contents, a set of car keys fell out and a stack of papers. I yawned as I picked up the top paper

Miss. Miller,

Everything you need is in here, there is a mustang in the parking lot of the Inn for you and as off tomorrow you will be starting a job that was gained for you at Onion creek horse ranchâ See Mrs. Joanne Walker she will be your boss, she knows nothing about the reasoning behind you're arrival in Texas so that back story is all yours to develop. A bank account has been set up and funds transferred into it to the valued of \$10,000â NO CREDIT CARDS. You have a new social security number; we wish you would change your name but that we cannot force you to do.

Make this new life work, and do not draw undue attention to yourselfâ lâ lâ !

I flopped back against the pillows and draped my arm over my eyes. My Life had sucked for the past eighteen months and right now I was almost 1300 miles from everything I'd ever known and everyone I'd ever known but this was how things had to be for the rest of my lifeâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !

Chapter 2: Ice Princess

..... The sunlight streamed through the window, I stretched and sat up I picked up my cell phone and checked the time 6.30am what the hell. I got up and walked into the bathroom and braced my hands on the sink. Well I was up so I may as well go for a run to try to shake off the last of the tightness from the trip. I washed my face and went back to my bags and pulled out a tank and shorts and got dressed and laced up my running shoes.

I walked down the stair case the smell of muffins cooking and Coffee made me realize I'd not eaten since mid afternoon the day before.

"Well good morning Honey did you sleep well?" the woman who'd shown me in the night before walked out of what I presumed to be the kitchen with a huge coffee pot

"Yes thank you, I'm just going to go have a look round and go for a run"

"Best way to start the day before it gets to hot" she walked into the dining room; I carried on outside and looked at the cars in the parking lot. Along with the cars of other guests in there that ranged from Lexus's and BMW there was a Blue Mustang with a black strip running from the front of the hood all the way to the back bumper,

"Damn I hope to god that's mine" I chuckled as I stretched the temp already almost touching 80degrees. I moved out on to the side walk and put in my head phones an hit Play smiling as "this means war" Blasted out, story of my life right now It felt good to run the town was waking up people going to work getting into cars with coffee cups that made me thing no matter were you were in the US this was every morning. I turned to the town square and ran across the street, I stumbled and looked down my lace was undone. "Damn it" I bent over and started to tie it

"Well that's one hell of a good morning" I heard a laugh to my left.

"Damn fine, view with breakfast"

"Hey, Sweetheart you want help with that? I'm good with my hands" I groaned and looked over my shoulder at the group of guys all sitting on the patio outside of the caf  .

"Why you need help remembering your manners" I put my hands on my hips

"OOOO you got bit Chase" one of the cowboys next to him nudged him

"Only offering didn't realize I was talking to the ice princess"

"Hey I didn't ask for you to look at my ass remember that jack ass" I hit play on my I-pod again quickly flicking it back from Lullaby and smiling as 'Gotta get me some' played "God bless Nickelback" I murmured to myself as I set off running again.

The town seemed like typical small town America where people smiled when they walked by you, Friends sat in the sun chatting. I stopped across the street from the Inn and braced my hands on my hips and took a deep breath the sweet smell of flowers drifted from the garden behind be, something that reminded me of being a kid playing in the woods with my friends" I pinched the bridge of my nose and tried to ignore the ache that had stomped its way into my chest. I stepped off the curb and went to the Inn pulling out my ear buds as I

Falling into Place

opened the door. The cooking smells had only increased since I'd left I looked at the large grandfather clock in the hall as it slowly ticked toward 7.40. I took the stairs two at a time the faster I showered the faster I could eat as the grumbling noises my stomach was making signaled it was ready to take a bite from my liver some time very soon. I pulled on shorts and a tank and a pair of wedge sandals and walked back down to breakfast. The few people in there all looked at me and murmured hellos and went back to talking or reading the newspapers as they ate.

"So how was the run darling" the woman from earlier said walking over and putting a coffee cup down in front of me and then filling it "You like our little town"

"Run was great, I like this town" I smiled back at her as I wrapped my hands around the cup "had a few cowboys say a few things but nothing I couldn't handle" I took a drink

"Well not many young pretty girls in this town so when someone new comes into town people tend to notice" she laughed "Those boys are harmless" I raised an eyebrow at her as she bustled away chatting with other people in the room. I got a plate full of fresh fruit and a huge Cranberry apple muffin and sat back down.

"Miss Hesta" the sound of a guy's voice called from the hall

"In the dining room Blake" Called out the woman, well at least I knew her name now. I looked up as a guy strode into the room his hair sticking to his forehead damp with perspiration his hat tipped back on his head as he carried a wooden fruit crate in his arm the bicep bulging as it held the weight the deep golden brown showing he worked outside in the sun. "Momma sent me in with the cherry pies you wanted" his voice sounded like he'd gargled with rocks when he brushed his teeth this morning deep rough and husky.

"Oh you're Momma is a life saver" she gushed beaming at him "Be a good boy and take them through to the kitchen for me would you"

"Yes Ma'am" he flashed a brilliant grin at her and walked off I caught myself looking at his denim clad ass as it went through the doorway into the kitchen.

"Damn you could bounce a roll of quarters off that ass" I choked on my coffee as the middle aged woman sitting on the table across from me with her friend. I smiled and got up from the table and walked out into the hall, as the door opened back from the kitchen and Blake and Hesta walked out Blake laughing and drinking a bottle of water. He bumped into me.

"Sorry" he turned and looked at me "It's the Ice Princess"â lâ lâ lâ !..

Chapter 3: Onion Creek Horse ranch

â lâ lâ lâ !.. He rubbed his hand over his five o'clock shadow on his jaw and shot me a smirk, I frowned at him, he'd been sitting next to the guy that I'd bit at.

"Where's your broke back mountain buddy?" I couldn't help but smile at him

"Ouch" he chuckled "I've known more friendly rattlesnakes than you" he laughed

"Blake be nice to the girl she's new in town" Hesta wiped her hands on her apron "and you boys were all raised better than a bunch of coyotes" Blake looked at her and winked at her

"Of course, sorry for the hecklin' this mornin' we had an early ride" he looked back at me "Kinda messes with the head when you didn't get your coffee at 3m like we were promised"

"Well you're all big boys in that bunk house it's not your Mamma's job to keep you caffeined up" Hesta huffed as she started to dust the already dust free clock in the hall.

"Yes Ma'am" he dropped a kiss on her cheek "Catchya late princess" he walked out I swear with more swag than he'd had when he walked in but damn that was on fine ass.

"All the Walker boys are built like that" she stood next to me and looked after him as he opened the door of a deep red Pick up truck and drove away four guys sitting in the bed of it laughing and chatting

"There's more of them like that?... DAMN" I said before my brain could stop my mouth from working she started to laugh

"Yup there are three boys and a girl" she nodded "Two of the boys are married and the girl was engaged but that didn't work out" She took a deep breath.

"Wait you said Walker" I faced her There Mom isn't named Joanne is she"

"Why yes she is" Hesta narrowed her eyes and looked at me.

"Great" I pushed my hair back.

"You know her?"

"Noâ ; I have a job there" I chewed my lip

"Oh well then you'll love it out at the ranch it's so petty and they have three guest cottages that they hire out and it's a full blown working ranch to boot" she seemed to fill with Texan pride "Joanne and my daughter were in high school together"

"Hmmm" I headed for the stairs; this was going to be interesting to say the least.

I packed up the things I'd used back into my bags and walked down the stairs with the keys for my car in my hand

"You be sure to stop in and say hi" Hesta smiled at me

Falling into Place

"I'll remember" I nodded "Can I pay theâ€" "

"Bill was pre paid honey" she went back to cleaning the glass window in the front door "You have fun and welcome to Wimberley" she opened the door for me.

I stepped out into the sunshine and hit the unlock button on the key fob and looked toward the Blue and black mustang giggling as the lights flashed on it. I hurried down the steps and opened the truck and put in my bags before closing it and getting in, savoring the new car smell as I turned the key and hit the roof button and grinned like a fool as it slid back. I typed the address of the ranch in to the GPS then I dug in my purse for my I-phone and attached it to the car and hit play as I reversed from the parking space and pulled down the drive turning right on the same street I'd ran down a few hours ago. The car drove like a dream it was a little too easy to touch the gas more than I should, but it felt good to be here and feeling as free as I was right now. I swung the car into a long winding driveway with paddocks lining each side and a tree line off toward the hills at the back. Horses grazed and long horned cows sought out shade under huge old trees dotted round the field. I rounded a corner and the ranch house took my breath away it was like something from the movies a large stone building the porch holding white rocking chairs. I stopped the car next to the red Pickup truck I'd seen earlier outside of the hotel. I opened the door and stepped out.

"wow" I murmured as I looked around to the left nestled in trees I could make out a cabin and remembered what Hesta had said about them renting them out.

"Can I help you?" I jumped and spun round and looked at the girl that stood in front of me her dark hair pulled back in a pony tail her jeans look like they'd been sprayed on her.

"Sorry I was justâ€" ; God it's pretty here" I looked round again totally different from the concrete jungle I'd lived in for the past 6 years.

Yes it is" she smiled

"Sorryâ€" ; I 'm Megan Miller I'm supposed to see Mrs. Walker"

"Oh Momma's been expecting you Miss Hesta called and told us you'd left the Inn" She laughed "I'm Jessica"

"She did?"

"Oh Miss Hesta likes to keep her finger on the pulse of Wimberley" I followed her toward the house "Put it like this she knows everyone's business and is more reliable than the local newspaper for information. Great that was just what I needed someone that likes to know everything. "Hey Momma, Megan made it" she called out as we stepped inside

"I'm coming" a pretty brunette that didn't look old enough to have five kids the ages that hers were came from the back of the house "Well aren't you all Miss Hesta said" I felt my eyes widen and I looked blankly at her "She said you were pretty, I'm Joanne and welcome to Onion creek ranch"

"Thanksâ€" ; Look I'm not trying to sound rude or anything but I have no idea what I'm here to do"

"Well it's a little bit of everything helping me out more than anything helping settle in the guest and cleaning the cabins, helping with meals" I listened to her "It's hot lets get get a lemonade" I followed her into a state of the art kitchen that really looked out of place with the rest of the house Jessica poured three glasses of Lemonade and handed one to her mom and then to me. You'll get a fair wage but you also will be living here and you're meals are thrown in as well" I nodded "nights are your own after 6 mornings depending on what

Falling into Place

we have going on can start as early as 4 when we're out in the fields setting up lunches for people but usually it's going to be around 6.30"

'Sounds good" I chewed my lip "I'm not afraid of hard work"

'O know the person that recommended you for the job side that" It took everything for me not to raise me eye rows at that one "One thing we ask of the staff and that they don't get romantically involved with each other nothing good ever comes of it other than too much drama"

'Oh believe me Mrs. Walker a guy is the last thing want or need right now" I ran my hand through my hair.

"Well alright then today I'll let Jessi show you around the place and lunch will be ready in about two hours"

"Thank you Mrs. Walker"

'Okay that's My Mother-in-law call me Joanne honey" I nodded and smiled at her as I set my glass down on the counter and Jessi looked at me

"I'll show you where you'll be staying first" she walked to the door with me following her, this felt good right now but then things had felt that way before and now look where I am

Chapter 4: New life

! Jessi and I walked back outside in to the heat of the early afternoon sun, she lead me round the side of the house it opened up in to a huge yard with a large pool with a spa on the far side of it and a bar and BBQ area just off from the huge glass wall of windows that was the back of the house.

"Holy crap" I ran my fingers through my hair and Jessi started to laugh. "Damn you're lucky living here"

"I guess we are" she smiled at me but the pool only went in three years ago we had to do with swimming in the creek when we were growing up, but the guests get to use it if they want but more of them tend to go to Onion creek the water is always cooler there and it's shady" she strode across the lawns toward the red barn

"You guys have beautiful horses"

"Thanks you My daddy's real proud of some of the blood lines we have here and then we have the mustangs for people who want to go on trail rides" she stopped and looked at me "You ever been on a horse" I shook my head "well that will have to change if you're going to be working here" she laughed.

"Will I be clearing out stables and things like that" I pulled a slight face

"No hell no we have the boys for that and me" she grinned "You'll be helping Momma more and probably cleaning and taking things to the guest because sometimes we get the city folk in that think living in one of those cabins with all internet and satellite TV is roughing it" she rolled her eyes "Mind you Blake likes to take out the women especially and ride them hard"

"Say What?" I blinked at her a couple of times she just shrugged

'Sorry Blake's one of my brothers and he likes to take them and get them all sweaty and dirty so it feels like they'll never walk again" she started walking away from me, damn there was a rule not to mess with the staff but he could do that to guests DAMN! I rubbed my hand on my face and hurried after her. As she walked through into the barn, the smell of fresh hay and horses assaulted my nostrils.

"Where are the horses?"

"Oh out in the paddock or out on a trail" she looked over her shoulder at me we house twenty five of the mustangs in here and the other barn has the" she put her fingers in the air as Quotes "Money Horses" in, and believe me there I hell of a lot of money in that barn, but you can keep those Arabians and let me have a mustang" she had a look on her face like it was the only place she was happy. "Any way I'd better show you where you'll be living" we walked out of the back of the barn there were three other older looking cabins two larger than the other.

"Damn they're nice"

"My Grandpa and great grandpa built them to house the ranch hands" she looked at me over her shoulder "this smaller one was the original ranch house that my Great, Great grandpa built when he brought the land" she stepped onto the small porch and unlocked the door "It's three rooms a Bedroom, a living come kitchen area and a bathroom" she pushed open the door "It does have Air conditioning that was something Mom insisted we had in every place people lived" she stood back as I looked round the room everything looked like it had come from a country living magazine rough hewed furniture from logs filled the room but made it look cozy and comfortable I walked through in the bathroom there was an old style tin tub but with all modern faucets

Falling into Place

and drain and the sink was a plain white vanity

"I get to live here?" I looked at Jessi

"Yes ma'am" she nodded "take a look in the bedroom it has a view of the creek at the end of the tree line" she walked across the living room and opened the door there was a queen-sized bed in there that almost filled the room with a handmade quilt on it and soft looking pillows I walked over to the windows and looked out the trees cast a cooling shade over the room and the field stretched out to where the sun light danced off of water.

"So you think you'll be okay out here?" Jessi sat on the edge of the bed

"More than okay" I sighed looking out of the window, for the first time in a long time I felt like I could relax a little and breathe more easily.

"Good now let's go get your sweet as all heck car and drive it over here" I spun round and looked at her

"There's a road round here why in heavens name did we walk in that heat" I frowned

"So you could see part of the ranch" she laughed

"Gee thanks" I rolled my eyes at her and smiled, there was something about Jessi that was innocent and free nothing guarded about her not like people I thought were friends back in the City, I shivered

"You okay Megan?" Jessi looked a little concerned

"Whatâ! Oh yeah I was thinking about not having to deal with another cold winter" I lied hoping to sound convincing

"Oh it gets cold in here as well that's why we have fire places" she opened the front door and we both headed back toward the barn we'd walked through.

"Okay what do you consider cold?" I laughed

"Mid 60's sometimes we can get in to the mid 50's" she rubbed her arms as if she was thinking of cold days

"Okay please tell me you're kidding" she shook her head "Okay Mid 50's and I'll put on jeans and a hoodie"

"What about a jacket?"

"Not till it gets to the low 30's" I shook my head it's could when the wind chill hits -40" She stopped as I kept walking

"I'd never leave the house" she ran to catch up to me

"Mid west born and raised you get used to it" She linked my arm

"You know it's nice to have another girl round here other than my mother to talk to" we carried on walking back to my car she got in with me and showed me the dirt road to get round to the bunk houses as she called them. "I'll help you with your Bags" She got out as I popped the trunk and then I'll show you around some more"

Falling into Place

'Sounds like a plan' I nodded grabbing my laptop bag first and walking into the house I heard the sound of guys laughing as I set it down on the Breakfast bar that separated the living room and kitchen from each other.

"So the new Girls here then?"

"Yes she is" Jessi called back

"Anything like the last one" a different voice chimed in

"Oh hell yeah she's different alright" Jessi was laughing

"Well she's got a fine taste in cars I'll give her that" I felt my head whip round at the sound of the voice from Miss Hesta's that morning

"Anything Mustang and you love it Blake" Jessi groaned

"Well I was raised right to love horse power and a good looking woman"

"Well you sure do that Blake" one of the guys called

"Shut up you ass and take the horses to cool down" I stepped out of the house onto the porch to see 5 guys on horseback and Blake stood next to my Car.

"well Well it's the Ice princess" He smiled putting his hands on his hips â lâ lâ lâ !.

Chapter 5: Ranch talk

"You two have meet?" Jessi spluttered

"Oh we've all met her" One of the guys on the horses, I looked at him

"You mean you gave me crap this morning" I stepped down from the porch and leant on the side of my car opposite all of them. Jess was frowning

"You boys were looking at her ass weren't you?" Jessi huffed "Not everyone is as easy as some of the girls round here when you boys bat those damn lashes" she put her hands on her hips

"You giggle when we do" the same guy on the horse winked at Jessi causing her to turn beet red

"Y'all shut up" She grabbed another bag from my trunk and stormed into the house

"Chase that's still my sister" Blake shot him a look "Stick to the girls in town" Chase wheeled his horse round and kicked it into a gallop causing a dust storm. I closed the trunk of the car. "So you're working here then?" Blake looked back at me

"Well duh" Jessi walked back out and stood next to me "why do you think she's putting her things in the Ol' house"

"I know she's got a tongue in her mouth why don't you go do some chores and let me talk to her"

"Because you're an ass" Jessi couldn't help but smile at her brother

"Maybe because you call me the Ice princess I don't want to talk to you" I walked up the steps on to the porch again

"Hey Megan come to the house when you're done and I'll show you round some more" Jessi laughed "You boys need to get your work done before Momma sees you slacking off"

"You done what you were supposed to" One of the guys laughed at her

"I did all mine while you guys were in town I get the afternoon to show Megan around" she bragged

"You girls should go to the creek and swim water I amazing today" Blake ran his hand over my car "Heats only getting worse"

"You been in there?" I looked at him

"We just rode back from the top trail and it looked to damn good out there" he nodded

"Well maybe later" Jessi elbowed him "Momma wants to give a few things to Megan"

"Well we're all heading there tonight for a while" Blake started to walk toward the barn

"Excuse my brother and the others they tend to think all women want a cowboy" she sighed

Falling into Place

"Oh I'm not looking for a guy?" I shrugged

"You're not looking for a girl are you?" She wrinkled her nose at me making me laugh

"No, when I do want some it's guys only" I nudged her with my arm

"Bad relationship?" She cocked her head at me.

"Something like that yup" I pushed my hands into the pockets of my shorts.

'Sorry I didn't mean to be nosey" she fidgeted

"It's okay things are still a littleâ difficult" I took a deep breath "so how about we go back and see your Mom and let me find out more of what I need to do"

Okay" she nodded "Unless you want to unpack your things"

"It can wait it was a long trip coming here I just want to stretch my legs more"

"Well that e can do" she laughed as I closed the door to my little home for the foreseeable future.

We both walked back through the barn the guys from earlier were washing down the horses they'd ridden and bringing in others from the fields there was a few side glances as we went through but nothing was said. We came out the other side and Blake was leaning on the outside of the barn on his cell phone

"Come on we're all going swimming tonightâ well it's hotter than the devils ass in the middle of August that's whyâ Bullâ you know you want toâ Well I can come get you around eightâ no bathing suit it required it's a bunch of usâ well maybe later it could be optional" Jessi groaned and Gibbs slapped him as we walked behind him "Ow Damn it Jessica"

"Well what do you expect if that's who I think it his" he glared at her and flicked her the finger she smiled and looked away from him. He looked at me, I felt like he was weighing me up. "Jack ass" she muttered as we walked round the pool by the main house

"I take it you don't like his girlfriend?"

"Girlfriendâ more like the town bike. She's humped everything male and on two legs" she literally ground her teeth "Now she's getting her fake tits and overly manicured nails into my brother"

"Well he must like her" Jessi stopped and faced me

"Blake likes the chase, and Blake likes the sex" she shuddered at that "Let's just say he's not met the woman that can satisfy his wants and reign him inâ and he goes for the wrong airhead type and it drives me crazy" She rubbed her hand over her face "Sorry I'm just really close to all of my brothers and they all were the same way till they met the right womenâ And Blake's not going to do that stuck here in Wimberley" she looked sad "Neither of us are"

"You want to leave here?"

"I tried that" she sighed "didn't work out that well"

Falling into Place

"Where did you go?"

"School in Dallas for business" she put her hands in her pockets and scuffed her feet as she walked

"And you're home for the summer?" I felt like I was prying asking these questions because when she'd asked me about my life I'd shut her down.

"No for a long time" She took a deep breath "I got mixed in the parting and drinking and got engaged to some jackass, that got me pregnant half way through my freshman year" I felt my eye brows almost reach the top of head "Then he cheated on me with my roommate and her sister so I came home" we'd reached the steps of the house. "So I came home" she walked up the steps into the house

"Hey" she turned and looked at me "I'm sorry for prying"

"It's okay it's not really a secret, well some of the older ladies in town were shocked because I was unwed and pregnant but" she shrugged "I Lost the baby right after he was born" I felt like I wanted to be sick at the sheer pain on her face "I guess something's weren't supposed to be" she pushed open the door "Momma, Megan wants to talk to you" she called out rubbing her hand to wipe away the tears on her cheeks "excuse me" she literally ran for the stair at the far side of the room and took them two at a timeâ lâ lâ lâ |

Chapter 6: Raw nerves

Joanne came from the kitchen and smiled at me

"So did Jessi take you to the Old ranch house"

"Yes Ma'am it's beautiful" I nodded "Is there anything I can be doing today to help?"

"I was just going to go to the big cabin to put in fresh towels but other than that everything is done" She picked up a laundry basket filled with what had to be the fluffiest white towels I'd ever seen "Today you can kick back and do what ever you'd like tomorrow is going to be the start of your work week"

"Yes Ma'am" I nodded

"Okay honey while the manners are really sweet please call me Joanne"

"Sorry" I took the basket from her "So I take it it's the stone cabin over there that these need to go to"

"Yep there isn't anyone in there until later tonight so the door is unlocked"

"awesome thank you" I went to walk to the door with the towels

"Well we're grilling out for dinner around six so come and eat and then no doubt all the kids will all head to the creek"

"Jessi said something about it"

"Do you have a bathing Suit? If not I'm sure that Jess has one spare" Joanne looked toward the stairs do you know where she went?"

"I have a few erâ 1 bathing suits" I smiled moving the basket in my arms "And she went up stairs"

"Oh Okay" Joanne nodded

"I'll go and take these and go unpack my things" I walked out of the house and headed across the stepping stone like walk way to the largest of the cabins and pushed open the door. "Damn this is gorgeous" I whistled looking at the room lay out in front of me looking like it had come out of the pages of a high end design magazine I wandered through and put the towels in the master bathroom and took my time looking round.

"Nice isn't it" I jumped at the sound of Blakes voice.

"I was just putting towels away from your Mom" I became flustered like I'd been caught doing something I shouldn't

"Well good to know but I wasn't bothered" He tipped his head to the left and rubbed his hand over his jaw.

"Oh, the cabin is amazing but then again so is the rest of the ranch" I pushed my hands into the pockets of my shorts. "I'd better go unpack so I'm not late for dinner" I moved to walk by him through the door" he put his arm out to block me

Falling into Place

"You can quit with the ice princess routine you know" I looked at him

"You're the guys that called me the Ice princess, not meâ I answered you all the way I did because did you not notice there was six of you calling out this morning and I was on my own in a strange town" I put my hands on my hips "It's called self defense"

"self eense we spoke to you not touched you" He frowned

"Okay, maybe to you don't see a problem with it but it's intimidating when you don't know peopleâ and hell where I'm from someone comment at you like that you need to bite back or riskâ" I ran my hand through my hair "Look let's start over" I took a deep breath. Blake narrowed his eyes at me again. I looked away from him the last thing I wanted was a ton of questions "hi I'm Meg, I'm going to be working here" I put on my best smile and held out my hand to him. He tipped his hat back on his head and wiped his hands on his jeans and clasped my hand in his.

"Okay I'll stop with the Ice princess but Damn girl you're a dork" he laughed 'and I'm Blake by the way"

"Oh I know I gathered that from Miss Hesta this morning" I went to let go of his hand but he held onto mine.

"So what brought you to Texas" I pulled my hand from his and walked outside he closed the door "You heading to the old house?" I nodded "I'll walk with you" he smiled at me "So how did you end up in Wimberley of all places?"

"I stuck a pin in a map and go a bus ticket" I tried not to have a short tone with him but it came out and I couldn't help it

"If you got the bus then how the hell do you end up here with that sweet as hell Mustang?"

"A friend set me up with it" I quickened my pace

"Well Damn I need to get a friend like that?" he chuckled his long stride easily keeping pace with me "Sugar Daddy" I stopped in my tracks and looked at him.

"What"

"Well just people don't get a car like that from just a friend without something more"

"Wow, well thanks for that" I shook my head and started walking again

"What did I say"

"You honestly think I got that car because of some rich older guy getting into my panties" I walked backwards from him "Well I think you can say the Ice princess is back"

I walked up the steps to the old ranch house and slammed the door behind me and paced in the living room.

Blake had touched a very raw nerve in what he'd said and brought back memories and feelings I'd tried hard for months to smother and lock away, this was going to be harder than I thoughtâ

Chapter 7: Safety net

â lâ lâ lâ lâ !. I looked out of the living room window Jessi and Blake were in the middle of the walk way to the house another guy was stood with then his back to the window. I grabbed my bag from the floor and took it back into the bedroom and unzipped it and started to fetch out the clothes and put them away. I tucked my hair back behind my ear and took deep breaths as I reached in and took a jewelry case from the bottom.

I sat on the floor at the foot of the bed and held it in my handsâ ! my safety net, my emergency fall back was in my hands, I unclipped it and let the roll of satin. The sunlight caught the stones in there sending twinkling lights round the room in different colors. I lifted the only ring in there and turned it in my fingers the center flawless pear cut diamond had come in at almost eight carats and another one and a half carats made up the rest of the band, I leant my head against the heavy wooden foot board and looked at it, this stood for the last eighteen months of hell, the fear and the self loathing I held in me. I slipped it onto the finger it used to grace and shook my head tearing it free of the finger scratching the skin with my nails as I yanked it off . I heard the front door open and Jessi called my name. I struggled with breathing for a minute as I rolled the satin back up and tossed it into the nearest open drawer.

http://www.polyvore.com/little_security/set?id=49501689

"Hey Meg" she knocked on the bedroom door before she put her head round it "I'm sorry forâ ! hey are you okay"

"Yeah I'm fine" I got off the floor and closed the drawer I'd thrown the roll into, the mirroe over the dresser showing the tears on my cheeks I lifted my hand an wiped them away leaving a streak of blood from the finger on my left hand I'd scratched

"Oh Hell what happened to your finger" Jessi moved into the room and took my hand

"It's nothing I got it stuck in the drawer and pulled it out" I shrugged "I'll be back in a minute" I walked from her and into the bathroom and washed my hands and face. I braced my hands on the sink refusing to look at myself in the mirror. "Come on, it's done, fear is a weakness" I rubbed the back of my neck and pushed off from the sink. Jessi was back in the kitchen unpacking a basket of things and loading the fridge.

"Momma sent you some fruit and Lemonade and some muffins so you have a few things to munch on" she closed the fridge door and looked at me.

"Thanks" I smiled "I'm sorry for prying earlierâ ! I really shouldn't have"

"Its okay it's common knowledge all round here" She shrugged as she put a cloth back in the basket "So I'd rather tell you myself rather than the versions from everyone else" She walked toward the door "So lets go and take a look at the horses if you'd like and then it should be dinner time"

"Deal" I laughed "they don't bite do they"

"Wow you really are a city girl aren't you?"

"Yes" I pulled a face and stepped back outside.

"No they don't tend to bite new people" she linked her arm through mine "I'm so glad I've got another girl around here to talk to"

Falling into Place

"I'm happy to be here" I nodded as the sounds of the birds in the trees made everything seem lazy and slow paced. We walked into the barn Jessi introduced me to some of the guys who were not as obnoxious when they weren't in a huge group. She walked over to a white and brown horse, which kicked the door of its stall as it saw her making me back away.

"Now mind your manners" Jessi crooned as she scratched the long nose and planted a kiss on it "this is Meg so you be nice okay" the horse huffed and nuzzled her. Jessi looked at me "This is Joker and he's all mine" she patted the side of his neck "he's a little bit of a protective guy but he's a sweetheart" I raised my eye brows "Y'all can touch him" she laughed grabbing my hand and pulling me over I tentatively raised my hand my eyes fixed on the deep large brown ones that were focused on me, I put my hand on the side of his neck feeling the smooth coat over the sheer muscle.

"Damn" I whistled making him nod his head up and down making Jessi and I both start laughing

"He's a show off as well" Jessi reached up and scratched his ear

"He's awesome" I was speechless at the sheer power that was in this animal as his muscles flickered under my hand.

"Hell well have you riding like the rest of us in a week" Jessi grinned

"Oh I don't know"

"There's enough people to teach you" a guys' voice chuckled Making me jump and Jessi start laughing " Here you go Jess" he handed her a cell phone "So this is Megan" I looked at the guy as he stood next to Jessi he was easily 6 foot and had muscles to boot and a smile that looked strangely familiar "Damn" he grinned

"Hey" Jessi hit him in the stomach "Four more months Reid" He put his arm round her shoulders

"I know" he sighed

"Meg this is my twin brother Reid" Reid this is Megan Miller she's"

"Working here and giving Blake a ton of crap" I raised my eye bro at him "I like you for that alone" he laughed and held his hand out to me

"Well thank you I think" I smiled shaking his hand feeling the same calluses I'd felt in Blakes when he's shook mine earlier.

"Momma told me to tell you girls to come up to the house and wash up for dinner her and Daddy are taking the night off and heading into town" He offered the two of us his arms "Ladies" ladies ladies ladies ladies

Chapter 8: Another shock

â lâ lâ lâ lâ !. "So, where did you blow in from then Meg?" Reid asked

"Mid west" I watched my feet as we walked

"Okay I've never left the state of Texas but I know the mid west is a huge place" Reid pulled his face and looked at me

"I've moved around between Minnesota, Wisconsin and Illinois" I lied "Just one of those sort of lives" so far from the truth it wasn't funny because I'd never moved from the city I'd been born in till a few days ago.

"See Reid there's a whole world outside of Wimberley" Jessi laughed

"Oh I know that My Wife's in Afghanistan" I looked at him "Crazy huh? The guy's here on a ranch while his wife's fighting the war"

"You knew she was in the army when you got married" Jessi let go of her brothers arm and squeezed his hand "She's done after this deployment and I can hopefully get a niece or nephew"

True" Reid laughed they both looked at me "sorry I married a girl I met on spring break last year and she deployed to Afghanistan two months ago"

"Wow you never think of the girls out there fighting" I put my hand to my mouth "Damn sorry I wasn't trying to be disrespectful" Reid smiled at me

"It's okay but hopefully you'll still be around when she gets home" I nodded "HEY MOMMA I GOT THE GIRLS" He yelled as we walked round by the pool Joanne walked out of the house with a tray of drinks and served them to some people sat under the shade of the large over hanging porch by the pool.

"All settled in Meg" Joanne beamed at me

"Yes Ma'amâ ! Sorry Joanne" I corrected myself

"Well y'all go grab drinks there's is lemonade beer and iced tea"

"You want a drink?" Reid looked at me

"I'll take a beer" I nodded

"Sis you want the same?" Jessi nodded

Joanne talked to the guests that were staying in the smaller of the two cabins and the smell of the food cooking on the grill wafted toward us Jessi and I went and sat on the swing at the far end of the porch Reid walked back through the screen door with Blake laughing and joking with him. Both of them dropping a kiss on Joanne's cheek as they walked by her and came toward us. Blake held out a beer to me

"Thank you" He pulled a chair up so he and Reid were sitting facing Jessi and I

"So wicked slut of the west coming tonight?" Jessi cocked her head and looked at Blake

Falling into Place

'Jess be nice" Reid smirked shaking his head

"Yes Sally is coming tonight and in more ways than one" He leant back in his chair obviously winding up his little sister.

"You'd better wrap the hose due that girls been with most of the town" Reid looked over at Blake

"Don't you start, at least I'm not getting a girl knocked up" he glanced at Jessi

"Anyone tell you that you can be an asshole" Jessi snapped

"Jess My sex life is none of your business just like you told me yours wasn't any of mine when I warned you about him" she looked down

"You really have a habit of pissing people off don't you?" I said looking at him as I took a drink

"He makes it his job sometimes" a voice laughed from behind me "Fall off the horse an get a grumpy fit today Blake" I looked over my shoulder and started to choke on my beer as I inhaled and tried to swallow at the time, Jessi took my bottle and banged my back. "Well you must be Megan from the Midwest" all I could do other then turning purple was nod as I was looking right at a copâ Not what I was expecting at all.

"You go see Miss Hesta?" Joanne said walking over and hugging him

'Yes Momma, and Silvia is going to be helping her out when she has her surgery" Oh damn it was another Walker boy "She told me we had a new girl in town and was working here"

"That woman could flap her gums for the damn state of Texas" Joanne muttered "Megan this is my oldest boy Sean, he's One of the sheriffs in the town" His eyes had the same searching nature of his other two brothers as he looked at me.

"Well welcome to Texas Megan" he rocked on his heels a little "what brings you all the way down here?"

'Sean enough the girl only got here last night she doesn't need you in uniform questioning her" Joanne wagged her finger at him "she wanted a change of scenery and a friend helped find her the job here"

'Sorry" Sean smiled and nodded at me "It's the job gets in your head"

"I can imagine" I puffed out a deep breath

"You staying for dinner?" Blake looked at Sean

"No I'm on duty till eight and then Silvia and I are going to go into San Antonio for a late dinner and a movie"

'we have a movie theater here" Reid pulled his face

"Okay Fine I can't get frisky in the back row with my wife in a town where I'm a cop" Sean threw up his hands

"I know way too much about my sons" Joanne sighed "You be safe okay and Tell Silvia to rest up"

Falling into Place

"Momma she's not four months along yet she's good" Sean rolled his eyes his hands going to his sisters shoulders and rubbing them in a way that showed he loved his little sister and didn't want her hurting with the fact a baby was coming in to the family. "I just was being nose to the newest member of the population" he laughed Looking back at me "Gotta make sure she's not obn the run" Okay now I wanted to throw up.

"no I'm good no warrants for me" I shook my head and took my beer back from Jessi

"Okay I'm out" He stepped back "Love you guys" he turned on his heel and walked away

"Well you're arrival I think must have made town news" Joanne laughed at me

"Seems like it" I nodded Can I help with anything?"

"No Honey it's all good" she shook her head "Oh Boys I'm going to be meeting Daddy in town he had a meeting that ran late in Dallas and isn't getting in till around seven so can you lock up the house for me before you go down to the creek"

"I'll do it Momma" Jessi got up and took my empty bottle from me "They'll need to check the horsesâ ; Beer?" She looked at me

'Oh yeah that one wet down easily" I nodded as my heart beat settled back from the full blown I'm going to pound out of your chest rhythm it had been doing.

"Damn sounds like Blakes girlfriend" Reid Laughed

"Hey She's not my girlfriend" Blake groaned "Lets get that clear"â lâ lâ lâ !..

<http://www.polyvore.com/cgi/set?id=49421288>

Chapter 9: Educated Cowboy

â la la la la la !.. We all ate dinner the conversation was polite and nothing else was said about my life or Blake's sex life for that matter as we all ate round the huge outdoor tube with the guest from the cabins. I helped take plates into the house and load them in to the dishwasher as Joanne protested.

"Momma will you go out and have a good night ih daddy" Jessi scooted her from the door

"But Megan wasn't supposed to stat till tomorrow"

"It's okay" I looked at her I'm sure we're almost done and the food was amazing joanne" she flushed a little

"Well alright thenâ ! Megan be in hr by 6.30 in the morning to help set up from breakfast"

"I'll be here" I nodded and I closed the dishwasher and turned it on Joanne picked up her purse and keys from the side and kissd Jessi's cheek

'Say good night to your brothers"

I will" Jessi nodded

"Night Megan, sleep well honey"

"Thank you and have a good night" I called back as I wiped off the counter top.

"So do you need a bathing suit?" Jessi asked

'No I have a few with me" I shook my head

"Well I'll put away the food to be stored you head back to your place and get changed and I'll knock for you in about thirty minutes" she grabbed the food containers and put them in the fridge.

"Okay sounds like a plan" I nodded

"Hey catch" I looked round and she tossed me a beer "Might a well let the night flow" I nodded at her and walked out of the door Blake was chatting to the older couple that were sat now round a fire pit, which I thought was a little bonkers because it had to still be over ninety degrees out here. Reid was no where insight. I stepped off the porch an popped the cap from the bottle and pushed the cap in to my pocket.

'If you folks will excuse me" I heard Blakes drawl from behind me as I walked toward the glow from the barn "Heyâ ! Hey Meg" I stopped walking and looked round as he strode over toward me "You going to go to the creek?"

'Oh yeah this heat is starting to melt the ice I think" I took a drink "well that and the beer" I started to walk again

"I'm going to the bunk house I'll walk with you" I shrugged "Did I say something out of line earlier" he increased his stride a little to match my pace "I mean when we were outside the old ranch house you seemed a little pissed with me for suggesting you had a rich sugar daddy"

Falling into Place

"Well I was, I am" I shook my head "I'm not some guys play thing if that's what you thought I'm not a friends with benefits Kinda girl" I felt my cheeks flush "I don't like people making shit up in their own heads about me when they don't know me and hell that's all you've done since you saw me this morning" I ran my hand through my hair

"I'm sorry" He stopped me as I went to step up on to the small old ranch house porch "I might seem to use these" he pointed to his muscles in his arms "Not this to get things done and sometimes I forget to put the brain back in gear"

"Did you even finish high school?"

"Yes I finished high school and I finished college two months ago" He put his hands on his hips "Seven years of college honeyâ "I felt my eye brows raise

"Seven"

"Yes seven years and I'm a damn good Equine Vet"

"Damn" I cocked my head a little and took another drink

"Seems like I wasn't the only one jumping to conclusions about how people are" he smiled at me

"And here was me thinking you were the rough tough Texan cowboy with taste for the sluts of the world" I chuckled "And I come to find out you're the Rough tough Texan Cowboy educated to the hilt with a taste for the sluts of the world"

"You've talked with my sister too much" he took my beer from me and took a drink

"Tell me I'm wrong Honey" I drawled out the honey like he had, damn the heat and the beer were giving me a little buzz. "I'd better go get changed and don't you have a bike to ride" I turned from him and walked up the steps and walked in closing the door after me.

Blake smiled and pushed of from the step and sank the rest of the beer as he heard the sound of music and a slight buzz of vibration, he looked round. A glow from inside my car caught his attention and he walked over to it and reached in through the still open window and picked up my phone and looked at itâ !..

http://www.polyvore.com/caller_id/set?id=49574701

Chapter 10: Kain's Calling

Blake raised his eye brows as the call rang off he looked at the door to the house and came up the steps and knocked on the door he turned the handle, and stopped in his tracks I was in the bedroom and had my back to the door. My top and bra was on the bed I pushed down my shorts and underwear and reached for my bikini. Blake blinked a few times and stepped back out of the door and pulled it closed and knocked on it hard.

"Just a minute" I called out, I pulled the cover up over my head and walked to the door and opened it "Oh Hi" I frowned at Blake standing there shifting from foot to foot.

"erâ | I â |erâ | wellâ |er"

"Are you having a stroke?" I leant on the door frame

"whatâ | oh no" his eyes met mine "I heard your phone ringing and it was in your car" he held it out flat in his palm

"Oh" I frowned at it there was only one person with that number "Thanks" he stood looking at me. His phone rang making him jump. "Your pants are singing" I laughed as my phone started to ring in my hand

"So is your hand" he glanced at the phone as Kain's picture appeared I hit decline

"It can wait" I shrugged as Jessi walked over

"Blake shouldn't you be getting your friend" Jessi pulled his phone from his pocket "OOOOO Text from her"

"Jessica give it back" Blake grabbed for it but she was quicker than her was she dodged round my car "Jess"

"Oh Baby I'm so hot for you" she read out I snorted "Come get me and see what my mouth canâ |" She stalled and pulled a face "Okay that picture message is nasty" she threw the phone back to him

"See that's why it's my phoâ |" he trailed off as he looked at the picture and smiled "damn" I looked at Jessi who was pulling faces like she was about to lose her dinner, my phone started to ring again Blake looked over his shoulder at me. "I think someone really wants to talk to you"

"Excuse me" I looked at both of them and went back inside the house and closed the door

Me * hey

Kain * you're supposed to call me I've heard nothing in almost 3 days, I call and get voice mail

Me * Look things got away from me

Kain * serious was too much to ask for you to let me know things were okay

Me * things okay there?

Kain * Meg my concern is you

Falling into Place

Me * Kainâ !

Kain * at least tell me you're where you're supposed to me

Me * you sound tired

There was a slight chuckle at the end of the phone

Kain * Meg, I'm big boy I can deal with it.

Me * Kain Iâ !

Kain * You scared

Me * trying not to be

Kain * only two of us knowâ leverything

Me * I know, it's trying to be normal afterâ !

Kain * don't because I know you and you need a hug right now don't you.

I sat on the arm of the couch and ran my hand through my hair

Me * you trying to make me break?

Kain * No I'm sorry, but there's hell of a lot of miles between us now

Me * it's safer like this and you know it

Kain * Says the girl that was refusing to leave

Me * I got a tattoo before I left

Kain * When you didn't leave the house?

Me * you were sleeping, and I took your car

Kain * Jesus Christ Megan

Me * I was fine

Kain * not the point

The door knocked.

Me * I need to go

Kain * Call me, for god sake check in with me Meg I need to hear your voice

"Hey Meg you ready?" Jessi round her head round the door

Falling into Place

Kain * New friend?

Me * I hope soâ€¦

Kain * call meâ€¦ oh and do you know anything about \$4million in missing jewelry

Me * Goodnight Kain

I hung up the phone and put it on the table

"Sorry about that" I looked at Jessi "I'm ready to go" we walked outside and headed down toward the creek the sound of people laughing and water splashing filling the evening air "Blake leave to get his girl?"

"He left to go into town I'm presuming it's to get his pants loosened" She rolled her eyes don't be surprised if he doesn't show up tonight they'll be somewhere scaring the wildlife"

"Hey you need to get in the water" Reid called from the middle of the creek

'Damn it Reid we just got here"

"Yeah but you and the Ice princes are going in" Chase came from behind us and Snagged Jessi in one move and Hurlled her into the water Inches from her brother

"Son of a bitch" She snapped "I have my damn phone" she held up a now dripping cell phone

"Well it'll dry" he laughed "You took forever to get down here" he turned and looked at me "you have a cell phone"

"No" I shook my head

"Well you're turn then" he dove for me I side stepped him and put out my foot making him sprawl. I stepped round him as everyone else laughed

"Too slow buddy" I pulled off the cover up.

"damn" One of the guys whistled Jessi walked out of the water

"I think you're a hit" she laughed "OOOO You have a tattoo"â€¦

http://www.polyvore.com/megans_tattoo/set?id=49569645

Chapter 11: Temper and a tramp

â lâ lâ lâ !. "What does it say?" Chase asked getting up and dusting himself off "Ice princess"

"You're an ass" Jess groaned "It say's 'sometimes we must lose ourselves to find ourselves' wow that's pretty much true" Jess sighed

"Pretty dumb if you ask me" Chase put his hands on his hips

"Well it's only dumb to those of you that can't spell it" I waded in to the water. Chase looked a little puzzled for a minute before one of the other hands started to laugh and the 'guy' wrestling started to whoops and hollers from some of the others.

"Hey Meg" I looked round as I got waist deep in the cool water Reid swam across to me "Take no notice of Chase it's about time someone put him in his place"

"He's just another guy with a mouth" I shrugged I dipped my shoulders under the water "you kinda get used to them" I looked back over my shoulder as the wrestling that had progressed into the water "You get dicks all over the US"

"I guess you're right" Reid nodded "So you get guys hitting on you like him then?"

"No not really" I shook my head

"Yeah right you not getting hit on" Jess walked over "Have you seen the tongues hanging out over there?"

"I'm not looking for any one or anything" I shook my head "so the policy your Mom has wish not dating staff I'm so okay with" I dipped my head back feeling the coolness on my scalp.

"I wished she worked for Momma" Reid groaned I stood upright between Reid and Jess as Blakes walked over a Skinny blond trailing behind him her plaid shirt tide right under her boobs and he white shorts so tight we could lip read from over here in the middle of the creek in the dim evening light.

"Wow that'sâ lerâ ! well" I ran my hand through my hair

"That's Sally" Jess huffed "Reid can't you talk to him she's so wrong for him" jess looked at Reid

"Hey I might as well have a heart to heart with a damn rattlesnake" Reid moved round in between Jess and I and put his arms over our shoulders

"Can't your wife shoot her" I laughed making Jess giggle "I've never met the girl but it seems like none of you like her"

"Don't tempt me" Reid shook his head "I mean sally has one hell of a bad reputation round here"

"You had her" Reid and Jess looked at me "Oooo sorry that should have stayed in my head"

"No I haven't" Reid laughed "Sean and Blake have dipped in the same pool"

'Ewâ ! not what I wanted to hear" Jess splashed Reid

Falling into Place

"Oh you so knew they'd done that Reid Grabbed his sister and picked her up "You're going under" He Launched himself back dragging her down and under the water with him. I walked out of the water laughing.

"Need a hand" I looked at the hand outstretched in front of me striped to his waist and in a pair of swim shorts Blake was offering me his hand.

"I think I got it" I smiled as I stepped on a slick rock and almost lost it there and then

"Really" Blake caught me and pulled me upright quickly the heat from his body felt strange against the coolness of my wet skin "could have fooled me"

"I should have kept my mouth shut" I laughed pulling away from him as the blond put her hands on her hips and glared at me "I always get bitten in the ass when I say something won't happen" I watched as his eyes wander down my body

"Well it's one hell of an aâ" !"

"Hey Baby you got the beer" sally's arm snaked over blakes shoulder "I kinda need a drink after the start to the evening we had" she pressed her lips to the side of his neck keeping her eyes on me as she kissed him "then you can get me in the creek I'm feeling hot"

"Sally I'd like you to meet Megan she's working here on the ranch" he seemed to be a little uncomfortable with the PDA she was showing him as he folded his arms over his chest the breeze ruffling his hair.

"Not from round here is she" she sneered with a giggle "You can smell out of towners"

"Why because we wear deodorant and shower, and not have that two day old hooker smell" I smiled sweetly. There were roars of laughter from most of the guys and a few of the girls that were round the small fire pit that had been started. "Oh and Honey you've got more Camel toe happening than they have in the Sahara"

"Oh Girl you so did not just say that" sally went to lunge at me, I didn't flinch or move it's been up against bigger and badder than a small town tramp "I'll show you what a Texas beating entails"

"Whoa" Chase and Blake grabbed her I felt hands on my arms and looked back to see Reid holding me

"Hey you came out swinging for me I give as good as I get I'm not here to make friends if I'm attacked first" I shrugged of Reid's hands "FYI little girl don't piss me off"

"He's my Cowboy" she hissed as she struggled against Blake and Chase

"And do I look like I care, I got here today I'm not in the habit of chasing men from the first time I see them and sweetheart I'm not up for the mach shit Been there done that and got the scaâ" !" I trailed off mouth was running in high gear, Karin's voice was in my head telling me to shut the hell up. I took a deep breath "excuse me" I looked at Jess "It's been on hell of a long few days, sorry for snapping"

"It's all good" Jess smiled at me

"You should be apologizing to meâ" ! not toâ" !" Blakes hand went over Sally's mouth silencing her I bent and picked up my cover up.

"I'm going to go and shower up and try to get a good night's sleep" Jess pulled me to her and hugged me

Falling into Place

"Sleep well Meg" Chase Said with a friendly smile not the leering smile he'd used every other time I'd talked to him

"Hey meg we'll go riding tomorrow after your done with whatever Momma wants you to do" Jess called after me I nodded and walked away kicking my own ass for opening my mouth a little too wide right now and letting my temper get the better of me

Chapter 12: Much needed call

â lâ lâ lâ lâ !. I closed the door of the house behind me and walked into the bathroom and started to fill the tub with water I stripped out of my wet bikini and rinsed it out in the sink. I pulled on my robe and walked outside on to the porch and hung it over the rail to dry in the stifling heat, I looked round and through the trees you could make out the glow from the fire and the faint laughter from the creek. I pushed off from the rail and went back inside snagging my phone from the couch as I went into the bathroom. I slide into the water letting it slowly calm me. I lifted my phone and hit the screen and then call.

Kain * Hmmmm

Me * we're you sleeping?

Kain * I wasâ !

He sounded so groggy, the sound of sheets rustling came down the phone and the click of the lamp next to his side of the bed going on accompanied with the hiss as his eyes readjusted to the light.

Kain * I could have been with a woman you know

Me * Yeah right.

Kain * heyâ !

He groaned down the phone

Me * you need to get a new mattress Kain that one's not any good for anything

Kain * It's on order apparentlyâ ! some girl ordered one for me according to the call I got from the furniture store

There was the sound of liquid hitting the bottom of a glass I closed my eyes

Me * hitting the goose?

Kain * do you have camera's on me? And that's changing the subject

Me * No I know you that's all and I know what you do when you don't sleep.

Kain * I know I told you to call me but I didn't think it was going to be within two hours of me last talking to you.

Me * yeah well I knew you were worried and you miss me

He groaned and I heard more vodka splash into the glass.

Me * it's hard Kain

Kain * you knew it wasn't going to be a walk in the park Meg, I tried to tell you

Falling into Place

Me * I know you did and I thought I was good but I'm so tightly wound right now I feel like I'm ready to snap.

Kain * Meg you can't, you need to hold on in there baby okay

Me * you called me that the nightâ ;

Kain * Megan please

I heard his glass get set on the counter top. I could picture his apartment in my mind the dark wood floors with the black leather couches, the brick work on the walls giving away it used to be some dock front warehouse years ago and converted into luxury apartments around 10 years ago. His windows over looked the inky black water the odd light from passing barges and boats the only thing other than the slight orange glow of the city to give away he was down town. He'd go a wet bar to the left of the room stocked with everything you could imagine but his drink of choice was Grey Goose and good and neat, the first hit always making him suck in air as it went down. The state of the art kitchen was all polished steel and black with nothing on the counter but a coffee pot and the two white mugs hung on hooks next to it. A spiral steel stair case went up to the loft and the king sized bed with the black and white comforter and sheets, ruffled rarely made. A large chair held the dis-guarded clothing that never quite made the laundry basket as he stripped to work out on the gym equipment housed between the bed and the bathroom, or to hit the triple headed shower.

Kain * Megâ ; Meganâ ; hey

Me * sorry I was lost in my mind for a while there

Kain * damn it Meg this is roughâ ;

More splashing of Liquor and a rubbing sound

Me * you didn't shave today

Kain * okay how in the hell can you tell that

Me * I heard you rub the stubble on your jaw like you always do when you're stressed, I've known you for eighteen months remember

Kain * can't forgetâ ; so what happened?

I heard the creak of Leather as he sat on the couch

Me * I almost said too much

Kain * to who?

Me * a bunch of cowboys and the girl you heard earlier

Kain * be careful Meg I can't cover your ass down there

Me * I know, I wished you'd have takenâ ;

Kain * you know that wasn't going to happen, I need to make sure you were safe

Falling into Place

Me * I don't deserve you

Kain * no you don't

I heard the creaking again followed with the deep long sigh, I could see him with his head resting against the Waterford Crystal glass he always chose to drink out of, his eyes closed the tight muscles in his shoulders knotted under his skin.

Kain * you deserve better

Me * Kain

Kain * Meg get some sleep honey an try to fit in without killing anyone

Me * are you going in to the office tomorrow

Kain * Megan stop worrying

Me * Kain please watchâ ;

Kain * I got my ass covered since you're not here to watch it for meâ ; Night Meg, sleep well okay

He hung up the phone. I opened my eyes and dropped my phone on to the pile of towels to the side and eased forward and lifted the plug an got out. My entire body and mind were done totally toasted for the night. I wrapped a towel round me and walked out of the bathroom into the kitchen and opened the fridge door and snagged one of the beers. I cracked the top and walked onto the porch and lent on the rail as people were drifting from the creek. I'd got only the bedroom light on in the back of the house and hadn't bothered with the porch light the shadow seeming to hold me as the guys headed to the bunk house. The few girls that had been there all got into a car and pulled away calling out goodbyes as they went. Reid and Jess walked together the two of them talking and laughing. I sipped the beer and listened to the night sounds and the odd whinny from a horse in the barn.

"Come on Baby we're alone" I groaned inwardly at the sound of Sally's drunken slurring drawl "You like it when I go down on you"

'You're drunk" Blakes tone was flat his stride was fast and long as he moved over the grass

"What put you in a bad fucking moodâ ; you were fine when you had me in the truck earlier" Blake kept walking I took another drink "I'm talking to you ass hole" she stumbled and grabbed at him

"You're a drunk mess" Blake had rounded on her I froze "You're the one I go to. to pass the time to relieve some of the stress I deal withâ ; you're not my girlfriend I don't owe you an explanation"

'Oh so I'm just your booty call... the girl for you to stick your dick in" She went to slap him missed and spun round ending up on her ass. I stifled the urge to laugh but for a drop like that I'd have rated it a good 8.5 "Ow" He bent and picked her up and headed for his truck. "Put me down I'll walk" Blake ignored her as he somehow opened the door of his pick up and literally tossed her inside. "You're a fucking asshole Blake walker" she yelled at him

"Yeah yeah, tell me something don't know" he walked round a flash of lightening streaked the sky lighting everything like it was noon he stopped and looked at me, I took a slow drink on the beer, damn that man was

Falling into Place

complicated he walked round and got in the truck reversing and pulling up alongside my mustang and looked out of his window Sally already passed out and drooling next to him. "I'd make sure you lock the windows tight, there's a bad storm moving in" I nodded. He cranked the wheel and drove toward the front of the propertyâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !..

Chapter 13: Cowboy at the door

â lâ lâ lâ lâ !.. I hung the towel in the bathroom and put my robe back on and checked all the windows were locked and I closed the drapes. The bed looked inviting as I pulled back the covers and shed the robe the air conditioning making the room cool enough to sleep. I turned off the light and laid my cell phone on the pillow next to mine.

The thoughts in my head were all jumbled and parts of the conversations with Kain kept coming back and the sheer stress I'd put him under by leaving. I snuggled deeper into the pillow pulling a second to me to hug, sleeping alone sucked. My eyes slid closed the rumbles over head signaled the storm was getting closer, but I was to tied to fight.

I jolted awake to the sound of the door to the house knocking, I fumbled around realizing the alarm clock was blank I twisted the switch on the lamp of the nightstandâ ı nothing I groped around for my cell phone using it as a torch to first find my robe and secondly to answer the door that was still knocking without banging off every piece of furniture in the house. The door knocked again as I hurried through the house tying my robe with my cell between my teeth. Didn't see the end table but I felt it as I stubbed my toe against it.

"Holy hell" I hissed dropping the phone under the couch "Mother fuckâ ı" the door knocked

"Meg" there was a rumble of thunder distorting the voice I limped over to the door and wrenched it open Blake was stood there in a duster coat the rain dripping from the brim of his hat .

"WHAT" I leant on the door frame as lightning streaked the sky I lifted my foot and rubbed my toes.

"I was getting in some of the horses and Momma called me to check on you" he put his hands in his pockets

"I was sleeping and now I think I broke my toe" I frowned at him

"I'm sorry" he looked at my foot "You need me to take a look at it?"

"In the dark?" He started to chuckle

"I have torches and lanterns in the bunk house" I put my foot down and straightened up

"And you didn't think I might need one anyway?"

"I did but I wanted to make sure you were okay before I got get you one" He tipped his hat back

"I'll be fine I'll just set the alarm on my cellâ ı aw crap" I looked in to the darkness that was the living room

"What's wrong?"

"I dropped my phone when I hurt my toe" I ran my hand through my hair.

"I'll go grab another lantern and come back" Blake was already stepping off the porch taking the only other light source with him. I crawled across the floor on my hands and knees trying to find the couch. "I go it" light was cast over the room as the entire house seemed to vibrate with the clap of thunder that banged over head making me jump

Falling into Place

"Oh damn it" I sat heavily on the floor and rubbed just above my eye

"What were you doing?" He walked over and put the lantern on the table and crouched down.

"Looking for my phone" I groaned "and you're dripping on the rug"

"Screw the rug you're bleeding" He got up and took his lantern into the kitchen I heard him open draws and the water running in the sink. Blake's footfalls came back toward me he shrugged out of his coat and knelt back down.

"What did you hit your head on?" he asked as he put the damp cloth to my head, I sucked in a breath and pointed to the corner of the coffee table.

"I would have still been asleep in bed if some cowboy hadn't banged on my door" I reached up and my hand closed over his for a second before I eased up and sat on the couch "instead of having a broken toe and concussion"

"Well we didn't know if you were scared of storms"

"No I'm not" I shook my head. "So did you get back here before the storm?"

"Back?" he frowned and moved my hand to check my head "Oh from taking a shower" It started to rain on the way home" she shrugged. "And when it storms like this it's all hands out no matter how much we've drunk"

"Did you get the horses in?"

"Yeah we had most of them in it was just a few of the mustangs that were out" he nodded "a few of the thoroughbreds are a little highly strung so we're taking babysitting shifts for them"

"Do you need me to help?" I looked at him. He sat on the arm of the couch next to me and smiled a lopsided smirk

"No I think we got it covered" he tossed the cloth into the sink from where he was sitting "I think you should get back to bed" he stood up "and take the lantern in case you need it"

"Why some cowboy going to knock on my door again?" I smiled as I rubbed the back of my neck.

"well you never know what might happen round here" he reached up and tucked a piece of hair back behind my ear

"Erâ Blake I'm not" there was a beeping and a glow came from under the couch "My Phone" Both of us dropped from the couch banging heads as we went "OH MY GOD" I moaned as he bumped right where I'd hit the table Blake started to laugh as he drew my phone from under the couch the picture message in full view, his eyes taking it in before I got the chance to. His face fell for a second.

"I'd better get going and I think you might want to answer that" he tossed my phone onto the couch and picked up his coat and walked to the door. I reached for my phone as the door clicked close after him and looked at the screen. It was a picture of a cowboy.

http://www.polyvore.com/picture_text/set?id=49922087

Chapter 14: Run it off

â lâ lâ ! I hit dial as I went and got back into bed.

Hey this is Kain I can't get to the phone leave a message

Me * Damn it Kain pick up it's meâ ! who sent that to you?*

I hung up and got back out of bed and paced the floor and sent him a text

WTF who took that pic of us? 2.22am

Kain Call me PLEASE 2.23am

I sat on the edge of the bed and ran my hands through my hair. Fear had me by the throat and was threatening to cut off the air supply watched the rain streak the windows, lightning flashed and the thunder sounded. I sat back down and turned my phone over in my hand my head throbbed as I watched the clock in my phone count off the minutes as the storm began to ease.

I got up a little after five, I was sure at some point soon I was going to fall asleep on my feet. I pulled on shorts and a tank and slipped my feet in to my running shoes I pulled on the arm band that held my I-phone and pushed in my hear buds and stepped into the already thick humid air. I stretched out the tensed and tight muscles before I headed for path that Jess showed me the day before that looped almost three miles round the property between the paddocks and the bars and the houses. The hardest songs I had were for days like thisâ ! This means war was on a loop along with Burn it to the ground and Side of a Bullet.

http://www.polyvore.com/run_it_off/set?id=49939374

I started running passed the bunk house opposite the house I was staying in the door opened and Reid and chase stepped out and waved at me I increased my stride and settled into the fast pace to match the beat of the music, my mind all but numb of thought as I pushed it harder. I took the entire path in just less than fifteen minutes I slowed as I came to the large Barn, Reid and Blake were stood outside. Reid nudged Blake and nodded in my direction. Blake looked round at me and said something to Reid who shrugged and gestured at me to take out my ear buds.

"Well how did you sleep?" He smiled at me "and how in the hell can you not be deaf listening to.. thatâ noise"

"Like crap o the sleeping" "I smiled "And it's not noise it's good and damn good music and sometimes Music is only thing to block things in here" I tapped my head

"How's the head feeling" Blake put his hands in the pockets of his jeans

"Like it's got a lead weight in it" I looked at him "Thanks for checking on me last night even if it did lead to injury" he broke a smile but it didn't reach his eyes "Were all the horses okay"

"Yeah they're all fine" Reid grinned "Well I'm going to leave the two of you as I have a breakfast Skype date with a hot solider" he walked away leaving a strange silence between Blake and I

"Sorry if I caused you not to go back to sleep" Blake looked round everywhere other than at me

Falling into Place

"It wasn't you" I shook my head

"The guy?" I looked at him and nodded

"so you dating?"

"It's complicated?" I closed my eyes and pinched the bridge of my nose "no complicated makes it sound easy compared to" my phone vibrated against my arm I ripped it off almost dropping it

New Message Kain*long nite need to sleep Don't call me I'll call U*5.23am

"Fuck" I fought back the tears. I caught Blake looking at me chewing his lip "Excuse me I turned on my heel and ran harder from him to the house and inside closing the door behind me. I took a deep breath as I sent a text while the shower heated

Make it soon dying here not knowing 5.26am

I put the phone down and showered and dress in a skirt and t-shirt before going across to the main house to help Joanne, I gave her a hand making and serving the breakfast out on the patio. Jess was already out with the guys heading to clear up some of the mess the storm had caused. Two of the guys headed over to the house as the first group of day riders turned up. I walked from the house with supplies for the new guest coming into the big cabin

"Hey Meg" I looked round "Chase wanted to know when you're done come find one of us and we'll take you riding" he patted the neck of his horse 'Gotta get the city girl in the saddle"

"I don't know what time I'm going to be done and I need to go into town so I might have to rain check for today"

"Well whatever but you're going to be ridding" he tapped his heels against the horse and pulled it round and walked off to the barn as Blake walked out with a medical looking bag. I carried on and cleaned the big cabin ready for the next guests, I kept checking my phone but nothing was coming in on it. I closed up the house and took the dirty things over to the main house.

"Thank you honey" Joanne smiled at me as she took the dirty linens from me "I think we have pretty much rocked it out today" he handed me a bottle of water

I enjoyed it" I sank half of the water "anything else you want me for?"

"No honey I think you can go riding with the boys and Jessica if you want to"

"I was more thinking of heading into town and seeing if there are any night jobs going" she raised her eye brow "I like to keep busy"

"Well The Ole rig is hiring bartenders and waitresses" She tapped her chime with her finger "Let me give J.D. a call and tell him you're coming into see him"

"That would be awesome thanks" I sank the rest of the beer

"Well you go and head into town and I'll tell him you'll be there in an hour" she smiled at me I turned ot leave "And honey tonight get some sleep"

Falling into Place

"Yes Ma'am" I laughed as I pushed open the foot and walked over to my house. I needed another job to keep my mind off all of the past eighteen months that weighed on my mind. I picked up the keys to the car and got in I headed out of the ranch and back into the town, this was going to be interesting to say the least. lol lol lol lol.

Chapter 15: Bar job

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !. I drove into the town Miss Hesta was stood outside of a store talking to someone She beamed when she saw me and waved I smiled back and waved at her as I pulled up outside of the bar. She bustled over to me.

"How you doing honey?" She hugged me as I got out of the car "Told you the ranch the was nice didn't I? And how sweet is Joanne and the family? Did you meet all the boys?" I started laughing as I reached back into the car for my purse.

"It's taking some getting used it it's a little different" I nodded at her she looked round at the bar "oh I'm looking for a second job" She frowned at me "I like to keep busy"

"But in a bar?"

"Bars are good I reassured her"

"Well you come have some Iced tea with me when you're finished in there okay"

"Yes ma'am" I smiled at her I walked into the bar. There was a big guy behind the bar cleaning off bottles as some baseball game was on the big screen TV's mounted on the wall. There were a few people in there watching the game and chatting but it was only mid afternoon, four pool tables took up one side of the bar

"You must me Megan" the guy from behind the bar called out as he dried his hands on a towel a held out a hand to me "Joanne called to tell me you were coming inâ ! I'm J.D." I shook his hand

'Nice to meet youâ ! Joanne said you were hiring?'

"Yes we are what you looking for?" J.D. perched on one of the bottle fridges under the bar.

"Well I can waitress" I sat on one of the stools "and I've bar tended for a couple of years"

"how old are you?"

"Almost twenty four"

"So you're working for the Walkers during the day?"

'Yes Sir" I nodded

"Okay well why don't you come back behind the bar now and let's give you a couple of hours trial" J.D. smiled he walked out from behind the bar.

I got off the stool and walked round behind the bar tucking my purse away in the corner. I worked up and down the bar as a few more people came in. People were inquisitive and were asking questions because they knew I was not from round here. I forgot how much fun it could be working behind a bar talking to people. The door opened again and Miss Hesta walked in.

'Well we don't see you in here all too often Hesta" J.D. called out as he got off the stool he was sitting on for her to sit down. I smiled at her as she looked round looking so far from her comfort zone it was funny.

Falling into Place

"well I was waiting to take tea with Megan here and it seems like you've taken her for yourself J.D." Miss Hesta fumed

"She's on a trial right now" J.D. laughed looking at me as I served a group of guys looking like they'd all just finished working on a construction site. But all of them eager to show me I.D.'s when I asked for them. "But I think she's got the job"

"She'll bring the boys in" Miss Hesta chuckled as J.D. waked back behind the bar and poured her a glass of ice tea and handed it to her.

"I was banking on it she's a very good looking girl" He walked back around and sat beside her "So what's her story?"

"I don't know, all I know is I got a call to say there was going to be a car delivered to the Inn and there would be a girl arriving on the late bus into San Antonio that would be staying for one night, the car was her's" she looked at me "and there she is"

"Oooo sounds intriguing" J.D. rubbed his hand over his jaw. "Hey Megan" I excused myself from the conversation I was having with two old guys and walked down the bar.

"You need anything?" I smiled

"Yep you to go home and change into something for working tonight behind the bar and bear in mind if you get typed \$5 then you have to get on the bar and dance" I raised an eye brow at him. "It's just something fun" he held up his hands and hell it helps you get tips, the waitresses do it as well.

'Okay but down here have to dance all Texan" I pulled a face making both J.D. and Miss Hesta start laughing

'So what does dancing Texan mean?" he grinned

"All country and line dancing because I have no clue on that"

"You can dance however you like hell for you I'll even let you pick your own songs to dance to" He shook his head "I think you're going to be earning a lot of money" I stopped from picking up my purse and looked at him

"I'm not a stripper am I? because I don't do that sort of thing" I swear it looked like Miss Hesta thought she was going to be struck down just at the mere mention of strippers.

"No it's just fun my wife started about twenty years ago when a fight started in here hell they got distracted when there were three pretty girls dancing on the bar that they forgot the fight and drank hell of a lot of beer and it's stuck"

"Okay" I nodded "Does that mean I got the job?"

"I think it means if you do well tonight Darlin' you got it" he nodded

'Awesome thank you" I ran round the side of the bar "Hey it's okay if I wear heels right?"

'Working all night in heels can be not fun honey" Miss Hesta chimmed in

Falling into Place

"I know but I've done it for a while"

'heels are fine Darlin'" J.D. Nodded "Be back he by seven okay"

"Yes sir" I nodded walking out of th door "Okay dancing skills were a little rusty but hell I could wing it and hell no one knows me here so why not. I got in the car and put the key in the ignition before I reached into my purse and pulled out my cell. Still nothing from Kain, I got a sick feeling in the pit of my stomach as I fired up the engine. I texted as I put on my seat belt

Where R U??? 4.04pm

The afternoon working in the bar had ket him at the back of my mind but right now he wa slammed right in the frontal lobe and I needed to hear from him again. I reversed from the parking lot nad headed back to the ranch hopefully I'd not have to talk to anyoneâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !

Chapter 16: Mixed signals

Joanne and Jessi were stood by the barn when I pulled back in to the ranch, I drove up to them and gout.

so how was the trip into town?" Joanne grinned at me "and all I'm going to say is Miss Hesta certainly has taken an interest in you" I groaned and leant on the side of my car

"So you know I got a job in the bar already thenâ and thank you by the way for setting that up for me"

'we had heard" she nodded "and you're very welcome, it's nie to see someone that doesn't mind hard work" she looked at Jessi"

'Oh so not fair I took my shift with the horses last night and I was out clearing up the downed trees just after five this morning" Jessi huffed

"All I'm saying is that maybe you should think of going back to school and carrying on with your college classes" I started to feel a little out of place as they went back and forth.

"Momma it's not going to happen so you need to drop it I'm working here end of story" Jessi turned on her heel and walked into the barn

"Sorry about that" Joanne sighed

"I'd better go get ready for my shift"

"You're working tonight?" I nodded "Well we might just have to take a trip into town and have a few drinks" she smiled at me I opened the door to my car and got back in. I drove round to the house and got out.

"Meg" I looked round Blake walked over leading his horse "You done in town?"

"sort of"

"Well I have a horse that you can ride, he's pretty gentle and well behaved if you feel like taking a ride" I reachd my hand up and rubbed the neck of the horse he'd got with him.

"I can'tâ!"

"Come onâ one of us is going to have you riding" He looked round the horses nose "I'll be gentle"

"You know if I didn't know better that sounds like a really cheesy line" I groaned making him smirk and lick his lips "And anyway I have to work tonight so I need to get ready"

'Work Momma doesn't need you at night so you get to play with meâ us" he corrected

'and again with the pick up lines no wonder you can only get Sally" I shook my head

"Ouch tat was a low blow" he laughed

Falling into Place

"Well you're Momma has rules Blake and I'm not going to lose my job for anyone and trust me I'm not a good bet" I took a deep breath "and I don't bed hop" I took a step back

"The guy on the phone?" He moved round the horse "I was kinda hoping he's your Brother" I chewed my lip as I thought of Kain and the lack of news from him

"I don't have a brotherâ !" I smiled at the look on Blake's face, this was a man used to getting what he wanted obviously, a car pulled up almost hitting the rear of mine.

"Blake" Blake and I choked on the cloud of dust that was kicked up by the car "Your Brother said you were heading to the bunk house" Sally walked over to him

"No I was coming to take Meg out for a ride" the word ride dripped with insinuation, I looked at him as he sighed looking at her but not in a damn I want you kind of way, it was a more you irritate me sigh.

"Oh" she looked me up and down "Well I got us something special planned for tonight" she walked over to Blake swinging her hips "I have the apartment to myself and I was hoping that you'dâ !" she looked over at me "Excuse me this is a personal conversation"

"Have at it but I need to get into my car and your ass is in the way" I glared at her

"That's yours"

"Yes sweetheart it's mine" I groaned moving by her and reaching in for my phone from the dash.

"Damn" she looked at my car and seemed to pout a little

"Blake I'll take you up on the riding lesson a different day" I looked at him. He smiled coyly at me and bit his lip

"Yes ma'am" I walked into the house and closed the door as Sally poked him in the chest

"What are you thinking looking at her like that, she's not a cow girlâ ! and can anyone say high maintenanceâ ! and those boobs aren't real" Blake was looking at the door of my house

"Girl yours are silicone" He moaned looking at her

"Yeah well hers don't look right"

"Looked damn good to me lastnight" he murmured as he patted the horse's neck before swinging himself into the saddle

"What? You took me home and youâ !"

"Sally did you want something because right now I want a shower some inner and a drinkâ ! not someone to suck myâ !" Sally moved her hand up his thigh

"Come on cowboy you know I know what you like"

And sometimes I'm not in the mood" he pulled his horse back "Go home Sally" he kicked his horse and galloped away from the house toward the creek. I smiled from the living room as I watched him go, he was a

Falling into Place

complicated man and that was intriguing, but I had one person on my mind and that was Kainâ lã lã lã l.

Chapter 17: On the bar

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !. I showered and changed and looked in the mirror as I fastened the ear cuff on my left ear. Well I was pretty sure none was going to look like this in the bar tonight I ran a coat of red lipstick over my lips and slipped my feet into the towering red heels that were shoes I loved and could would do anything in and had several times.

http://www.polyvore.com/not_quite_texan/set?id=49995284

I grabbed my phone, keys and purse and walked outside I leant on the door of the car and checked my phone. I couldn't wait. I hit dial as I opened the door and slid into the seat.

Hey this is Kain, I can't get to the phone so leave a message

Damn it Kain come on

I fought with the tears and the emotion as I hung up tossing the phone on the seat next to me

"Damn idiotâ !" I muttered "He knows I'm worried" I looked in the mirror as I turned out f the drive for the ranch people were moving around going to get dinner, I just wanted to get to the bar and forget things for a little while.

â lâ lâ !.. "Hey momma" Blake walked into the kitchen and put his plate in the dishwasher

"How's the colt doing?" She asked wiping the cook top over

'Whatâ ! oh he's fine he's going to be a good strong racer" Blake rubbed the back of his neck

"You out with that Reynolds girl again tonightâ ! you know I don't her one bit, and she's got a reputation around town" Joanne chuntered on

"Momma" Blake caught her hands "where's Meg working at night?"

"The ole Rigâ ! she went into see J.D. this afternoon" she narrowed her eyes at him "Blake Walker I know that look and no"

"What" He let go of her hands and walked to the fridge and pulled out a bottle of water

"I know that Walker look you boys get when you want somethingâ ! She's staff she's not fair game..." Joanne wagged he finger at him "Hell why can't you be like your brothers instead of chasing every piece of a female ass that walks by"

'Because it's what we all do till the right girl appears" Sean was leaning on the door frame. Blake looked him "But Bro you don't know her and from what Jessi was saying there's some hot guy on her phone"

"I know I've seen him, it's someone named Kain" Blake braced his hands on the counter

"Well if she's got a man you stay away Blake"

Falling into Place

"Doesn't it make you wonder if she's got a man why the hell she'd come here in the middle of the night" Blake looked at both of them "because I'm damn sure if she was my girl I wouldn't let her go anywhere without me"

"She's not your girl Blake there might be more going on than she wants to tell us" Joanne put her hand on his arm "Sometimes things can get too much for people, look at your Sister she won't think of going back to college because of what happened" so stay away from her Blake please I'm not going to watch you get hurt" she touched his cheek and walked outside to talk to her guests"

"And you're not going to listen to Momma re you" Sean chuckled

"Nope" Blake shook his head "I want to know more about Megan Miller, I don't know why but I want to" ..

I pulled up outside the bar and got out the sound of Country music flooded from the open windows. I locked the car and walked inside.

"Damn" I heard a whistle from over by the pool table

"That's the new girl working at the walkers place" another voice chimed in

"Who wears and can walk in shoes like that" a girl laughed

"Well she can and it makes her ass look fine" I tried not to smile at the comments as J.D. walked round the bar and hugged me

"Well damn you look different and those shoes" he looked worried

"I've been on my feet in these for twelve hours straight they're good" I assure him "Now I take it I'm on for the night"

"Yes ma'am" he adjusted his collar as I went behind the bar "Did t spray those pants on you?" his face turned beet red "Damn I said that out loud didn't I" I just nodded and started to serve. I never noticed the time ticking by I was having too much fun.

"Hey Meg your boss just walked in" One of the guys I'd been talking to pointed as Joanne walked in with most of the guys from the ranch. Jessi followed talking to Reid and laughing with Blake coming in last talking on his phone.

"Damn you look Beautiful" Jessi giggled running to the bar "holy crap how are you walking in those" she leant over the bar and looked at my shoes

"Easily" I laughed "So what can I get all of you?"

"We'll take four pitchers of beer" red threw money on the bar

"And I'll take a Grey Goose neat" I swallowed hard as I looked at Blake when he threw that order in "It's the vodka in the bottle with the birdies on" he cocked his head and gave me a wry smirk" Joanne moved in front of him

"And can I get a glass of Merlot" she smiled

Falling into Place

"Momma" Blake hissed a little

'We talked Blake remember" I walked away from them and started to get the beers and the rest of the drinks together.

"I'm sorry" Reid put his arm round Blake's shoulders "we all need to throw five bucks in each and see how long it takes for Megs to give up on the dancing in those shoes"

'Y'all are mean' Jessi swatted him"

"Jess come on she's lookingâ wellâ damn hot to damn hot to be working here" Chase laughed

'and she's working guys let her be" Jessi defended me "Mind you Blake's distraction just walked through the door" they all looked round as Sally walked in, in a skirt that you could have mistaken for a belt and a shirt that looked three sizes too small

"Damn that's a hot mess" Joanne muttered taking the drink I put down in front of her "Chase you and me take on Reid and Brent at pool"

'Yes Ma'am Chase laughed "Hey Meg" I put the pitchers of beer down "Here's twenty in tips you know what it means"

Oh I know" I laughed taking the twenty from Chase's fingers and putting it in the tip jar

'Chase" Blake glared at me as J.D. walked back round the bar and offered me his hand to get up on the bar

"You sure you're okay in those shoes?" J.D. called over the noise in the bar

"I'm fine" I laughed I stepped over the drinks on the bar and walked round to the juke box on the wall "damn it do you not have anything other thanâ oh Never mind" I hit the buttons and walked back into the middle of the bar

'GO MEGS" Jessi yelled

"Watch your ass princess" Blake cocked his head as Sally came over and draped her arms round his neck

"My ass is just fine cowboy" the music clicked on to a track I used to dance to a lot. How the hell Pink got onto a juke box in a cowboy bar in Texas I had no clue but it saved me I bounced on the balls of my feet as the chorus of Raise your glass played. It brought back a lot of memories as people watched me I crouched down in front of Blake at the line "if you're too cool for school and treat me like a fool". I trialed my fingers down his cheek before getting back up and bouncing again.

"Who the hell does she think she is?" Sally snapped taking Blake's glass from his hand and tossing the contents on the bar

"What the hell?" Blake grabbed her wrist as my foot hit the liquid and I slipped, everything seemed to go into slow motion as I fell. I braced for hitting the floor but hit something solid but safe as arms caught me perfectly.

"Falling for me are you" a voice chuckled "this has to be our song"â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ .

Chapter 18: Hot or not

â lâ lâ lâ ! "Oh God" My arms wrapped round Kain's neck he set my feet on the ground and hugged me back his head buried in my hair I pulled back and balled my fist and punched his arm

"What the hell?" He scowled at me

'Do you not check your fucking phone" I balled my other fist and punched his other arm

'Jesus Meg" he laughed pinning my arms to my sides "It's good to see you too" he pulled me back to him I buried my head in his shirt and inhaled the fresh scent of the shower gel and deodorant he used.

"Damn it Kain, I was scared" I murmured fighting the urge to cry "I thought something had happened" He held my face in his hands and looked at me

"I promised you I'd be fine didn't I and I am"

"Butâ !" He looked over my shoulder at the entire bar that was watching us together.

"But I'll explain later" his voice carried the commanding tone it's grown to know and understand to shut up.

"Well aren't you going to introduce us" Joanne walked over smiling "and I take it you weren't expecting a visitor so soon after getting here?" she glanced at me and then back at Kain

"No, Ma'am I didn't" my arm was round his waist as he draped his round my shoulder

"I'm Kainâ ! Kain Price" he offered Joanne his hand "and I thought I'd surprise Meg"

"So where are you staying Kain?" Joanne beamed at him

"Well I was hoping to find a motel or something, as I didn't have time to decide anything"

"Well I'm sure you can stay in the old ranch house with Megan"

'Momma" I looked round at Blake as he stood with his hands on his hips

"Yes Blake" she took a deep breath

"Can I see you outside for a minute?"

"In a minute" She laughed "Kain I'm going to be heading home in the next few minutes you can hitcha ride with me if you like unless you want to stay here with your girl till her shift is done" Kain looked at me and raised his ey brows

"Shift?"

"Beats sitting around thinking" I shrugged "Oh and this is Joanne Walker my boss at the ranch" I already knew he knew who she was but had to make it look good.

Falling into Place

"I'd love to stay with Meg we haven't had alone time in a few weeks" he grinned at me

"Well done deal let me go see what my son wants and we can leave" Joanne laughed she walked over to Blake He stalked off thrusting his glass into Sally's hand.

"Are you sure you're okay?" I ignored the glares Sally was giving me and the open mouthed looks coming from Jessi and some of the others in there

"We'll talk about it when your shift is done" I sighed rubbing the back of his neck

"It's not good is it"

"Later baby okay" He gave me his half smile and lent forward and kissed my forehead

"Do you need my car?"

"No I rented one at the airport" he shook his head "You like the mustang?"

"You know I do I knew it was your doing on the car right down to the color choice" I laughed

"Well your last one wasn't your choice was it" he tucked hair behind my ear "You never looked good in the orange one"

"Why do you think I tried to wrap it round a light pole" I rubbed my arms.

"Hmmm if only that was the truest reason"â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !..

â lâ lâ lâ !Joanne walked outside Blake was leaning on the hood of my car

"What the hell was Sally doing throwing a drink on the bar?"

"She was being sally" Blake turned round and sat on the hood and folded his arms

'And what's with that face" she tipped her head

"You're offering to let a guy sleep with Megan"

"Blake she obviously knows him and he's her boyfriend so why wouldn't I let him stay with her"

"Butâ ! butâ !"

"Blake we had this conversation before didn't we, she's a member of Staff so you steer clear of her I've had too many girls quit because one of the Walker boys have broken their hearts or gotten them in the family way" she poked Bakes shoulder

"Below the belt Momma" He got up and paced

'Blake you're brothers have finally learnt to behave, your sister is too scared to get close to a man and you well sweetie you're too much like your daddy, every woman you think is fair game" Blake shook his head "Oh don't you give me that Blake Walkerâ ! I love you but you need to find the right girl for you not the town slut

Falling into Place

or a girl that already has a man of her own and I must say a very good looking one at that"

"Mommaâ Megan turned up here not knowing anyone; if she had a serious guy in her life would she have done that"

'Blake I said Leave her alone and I mean it, you'll never get her if you force her away from akin and who said she'd be interested in a cowboy anyway" she kissed his cheek "Control that temper of yours Honey, I like Megan and I'd like her to stick around for a while, and becoming another notch on your bed post isn't going to keep her here" Blake looked down as she looked round as Kain and I walked out of the bar. "So you ready to go Kain?"

"Yes Ma'am" he nodded Pulling a set of keys from his pocket

"well follow me" she looked at Blake h just shook his head at her

'hey" Kain waved his hand in front of my face catching my attention "You have your laptop"

'It's on the bed" I nodded "You want to borrow it?"

"Please I left mine behind"

"Make you're self at home" I squeezed his arm

'Oh don't worry I will and I'll take the right side of the bed" he chuckled as he walked toward the Black SUV parked next to Blakes truck.

"You are kidding me right" I smiled

"What?" he held out his hands and opened the car door and followed Joanne out of the parking lot. I felt someone watching me and looked round at Blake

'Are you okay?"

"You and he close?"

"Yeah, I don't normally hug strange men in a bar, I'm not named sally" I laughed

"Why'd you leave where ever it is you came from if you had him there?"

'What's this a hundred and one questionsâ I had my reasons for leaving like the winters are too damn cold, the summers too humidâ Kain is a casualty in my moving" My mind was screaming the words shut up dumb ass at me

"Heartless isn't it leaving a guy because of the weather" He brushed by me the door of the bar

"Wowâ I get kicked in the head by a horse did you? people all have reasons for doing certain things and I'm sorry since when is my life your concern, I met you two days ago Mr. Walker" I caught up with him at the door "Believe me you do not want to know my life it's not pretty and Kain is my business, let's get that clear" I poked him in the chest as he backed into the wall "I like it here so far even if I've had to deal with the town gossip, a bunch of leering cowboys on heat, the world's most irritating person in the form of Sally and a spider the size of my car in the bottom of my tub this afternoon, I draw the line at giving my life story to try to

Falling into Place

justify anything I'm doing to anyone especially someone as hot as you" I stopped and blinked a few times "I meant as hot headed and nosey as you" I gabbled, way to go motor mouth" I internally Gibbs slapped myself "I need to get to work" I went to open the door Blake caught my hand

"You meant hot, and we both know it, Kain or not you've flirted with me" he moved me against the wall the smirk on his face was not only cute as hell but smug as all heck

"I so did not it was a slip of the tongueâ I don't go for men like you Blake sorry I like mine tall dark and handsome, not Tall, blond and full of himself" I shook my head, I willed my feet to move but the stubborn bastards refused welding me to the spot caught between his body and the wall

"I can't try to change your mind you know" he raised a hand, in instinct I flinched and closed my eyes bracing for impact, nothing came I slowly opened my eyes to see him looking at me, I took my chance and ducked from under his arm

"Meg" his voice had become softer

"Stay clear Blake, I'm not a good bet, Kain's found that out" I opened the door to the bar and walked back inside my head a jumbled mess of emotions and feelings between Blake and Kainâ lâ lâ lâ lâ |

Chapter 19: Bed time

â lâ lâ lâ I spent the rest of the night dodging Kain related questions from the ranch hands and from and eager Jessi. They'd got me dancing on the bar four more times only this time I noticed Blake keeping Sally far from the bar but watching my every move. Jessi got up with me at one point as she put on some country song and she was showing me what to do.

J.D. and I closed up the bar a little after midnight after kicking out the last of the drunks. I cleaned down the bar and restocked the fridges for the girls coming in for the lunchtime shift.

"How do you walk in those shoes and for the past seven hours at that?" J.D. smiled as I picked up my purse

"Years of practice?" I shrugged "So did I do enough to get the job?" I pushed my tongue in my cheek

"I think you did more than enough even if you did fall off the bar on to a customer" J.D. Laughed

"Well technically that doesn't count I know him" I pulled my keys from my purse

"Well tomorrow night is covered but Friday night we have a mechanical bull riding and Karaoke so I could do with the extra hands behind the bar"

"Deal boss" I grinned "Good night"

"Night Megan watch how you go" I walked out to my car Blake's truck was still in the parking lot I looked round for him but didn't see him, which was a good thing after the lap of the tongue earlier" I reversed from the front of the bar and headed back to the ranch. There were torches lit on the porch by the pool people sitting round chatting, Jessi waved at me as I drove up I slowed and wound down the window.

"We were keeping Kain company" she was trying not to grin "He's a mysterious one"

"Oh he's a gem" I sighed "tell him I'm going to shower and hit the hay I'm beat"

"Oh I think he'll come after you, he's watched the road all night" she giggled "Damn you never said the hot guy on your phone wasâ i"

"Who are you talking about?" Kain walked over

"Some guy we know" I laughed looking at him "You can stay here if you want but I'm going to go to bed"

"I like the sound of that" he chuckled "Night Jessi" he moved round her and opened the door of my car and slipped into the passenger seat

"Night Kain, Night meg" she stepped back with a huge smile on her face as I pulled away turning at the barn toward the old house and the bunk houses

"Well you seemed to make an impression" I glanced over at him

"So did you they haven't stopped talking about you" he ran his hand through his hair "they seem like nice people"

Falling into Place

"They are. I'm worried I'm going to ruin that" I pulled up next to his SUV and turned the key and lent my head back

"Can't think like that girl" he rubbed my leg

'Well after the picture text you gotâ ' I opened the door and got out as Blakes headlights swung round the corner from the barn. Kain got out and braced his hands on the roof.

"I know and that's why I'm here"

"I knew it you're in trouble right?" I frowned my heart racing in my chest

"Not out here" he shook his head and came round to my side of the car "you said something about bed" He cocked his head as Bake was standing on the running board of his truck watching us "and we seem to have and audience out here" I looked over at Blake.

"He's a strange one" I sighed "there's something about him Iâ ' I stopped and chewed my lip

"Megan" Kain chuckled

'Sorry" I began to walk to the steps of the porch of the house "You coming to bed"

Sounds like a plan" Kain took the steps quickly and put his hands on my hips as he moved. A Slam of a car door made us both jump and Blake walked into the bunk house and banged the door behind him.

"Wow he's a touchy one isn't he?" Kain chuckled

"Forget him" I unlocked the door feeling my cheeks tinge red in the darkness" I pushed it open Kain's bag was on the couch.

"How long you going to be around?" I asked as he closed the door

"Not sure" he walked to the kitchen and pulled two beers from the fridge

"Does he know?" Kain took a drink from one of the beers and handed the other to me "I mean he has to after thatâ ' I hung my head "who the hell followed us?"

"Carter apparentlyâ ' which in a way is a good thing" I snorted a little and took a long drink from the bottle "Well rather him than Weber" He looked at me "I'm sorry I didn't call you but I didn't answer my phone to anyone I told Weber I was out of town on family business and couldn't be reached till tomorrow" I sat heavily on the couch "You were so panicked I needed to see you here and settled before I go back" I grabbed his hand

"Don't go back Kain" I was almost begging him "Please it's too dangerous"

"It's still fine as long as they don't find out about the two of us" he smiled "No you want to go warm the bed" he reached his hand out to me.

"Let me shower the scent of beer off me and I'll be there" I kissed his cheek "You warm the bed"

"Yes Ma'am" he lent on the bedroom door frame as I walked into the bathroom. I tried not to let my mind work itself into a frenzy like it usually did as I quickly showered and dried I slipped on a t-shirt I'd stolen from

Falling into Place

Kain's drawers before I'd left home. I stepped out of the bathroom and looked at Kain who was lay in the bed the sheet to his hips as he looked at my laptop.

"Comfortable" I laughed

"Very" he nodded pulling back the covers on the other side of the bed I moved to go into him as the door knocked "Well that's timing" he smirked I nodded and walked to the door and opened it Blake was stood there

"Blake it's late"

"I was wondering about the lamp I brought you over last night" I frowned at him as I saw him look passed me at the bedroom where Kain was

"I took it back to the main house this morning" I leant on the door 'your mom said she'd put it away"

"Hey Meg you coming to bed sweetheart" I tried not to laugh at the way he was trying to wind up Blake

"Night Blake" I closed the door as I heard him stomp off the porch and the sound of his truck firing up filled the night, I walked in the bedroom and closed the door "You are naughty" I wagged a finger at Kain

'Yeah well a man should know not to disturb another man when he's with you" he laughed "now bed you" He pulled my hand and brought me onto to he bed with himâ lâ !

Chapter 20: head to head

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !. I lay awake the moon light casting the shadows of the trees over the entire room. Kane was snuggled against my back one arm under my neck the other over me his fingers playing with mine.

"I've missed this" I sighed quietly

"Meg" He moaned

"I don't know if I can do it Kain"

"What you want to pack up and go back home?" His tone was a little sharp "we talked about this and you getting out when you did was the right thing to do" He moved and rolled me over to face him "Please tell me you're not thinking of him?"

"No, you saw what I went through for so long you think I'd go back to it" I sat up

"You did once before" I looked back at him

"I didn't have a whole lot of choice then did I?" I put my head on my knees "you know why it took so long for me to finally walk away and what I've had to give up" He sat up and moved behind me laying his head against my back.

"You think it was easy to watch what happened to be so close and not be able to help you. My neck's on the line over this and if Carter send him the picture of us looking like I was going to kiss you I'm as good as dead" He moved round to face me "I can look after myself though and I have no problem disappearing, what I do have a problem with is you thinking you can't do this" he rubbed my arms "I believe in you Meg, it's going to be hard and people will ask questions but your life's going to have to be a lie to some degree" his hand moved to stroke my cheek.

"Move here with me Kain" I held his hand "You said you don't have a problem upping and leaving so do it" He closed his eyes and got off the bed and walked into the living room he opened the front door and stepped out onto the porch. I followed him putting my hand between his shoulder blades "Kain?"

"I got the new mattress" He chuckled slightly

"that's changing the subject isn't it" I moved round in front of him

"You wouldn't want me to not use it now would you" he put his hands either side of me on the porch rail. I had to smile at him as he held a lopsided grin on his face "after all you brought it for me"

"Yeah well yours was lumpy" I poked his shoulder

"Never held up your snoring" he chuckled

"I don't snore" I frowned at him

'Like a damn chain saw" he hugged me to him "I have to go back Meg"

"And what if Carters sent him the picture"

Falling into Place

"That I'll face when I get there" I felt a lump in my throat "I'm okay as long as I know you're safe"

"You're a selfish son of a bitch Kain" I pushed him away "Damn you" I walked off the porch

"Heyâ!" he took the steps in one stride

'Go Kain, Go if you want, why the hell did you even come here you could have just called me and told e it was a fucking Cop that took the damn picture" I was in full blown mad Meg Mode He reached for me "Hell screw it I'll go back with you and face it with you is that what you want because it kills me being away from youâ! I'm scared for you kain"

"Megan I have..."

"You have nothing and we both know it you're being used as much as I wasâ! what happened three months ago Kain" I stepped up to him "You stepped in when you shouldn't and what happened" He grabbed both of my wrists and shook me a little

"I know what happened and you think I'm proud of it; you think I don't see that in my head every day" he was as angry as I was "How the hell do you even look at me after that"

"Because it was a mistake and if I hadn't played along you'd have been strung up by your throatâ! you wanted us both to die that night" he closed his eyes

"Dude I really think you should let her go" My breath caught in my throat and both Kain and I looked round Blake was standing there his hands on his hips his shirt untucked and a huge assed hickey on the side of his neck "Meg you okay"

"Shit" I groaned "Blake it's late you should be getting to bed"

'Really and leave this ass to beat on you"

'What?"

'Excuse me" Kain let go of me and faced Blake

"You heard me" Blakes body stood firm as he faced off against Kain "I don't know if it's where you come from but down here you learn to be nice to a woman not lay your damn hands on her when you're arguing"

"But the fuck out" Kain growled "Believe me cowboy you have no idea who you're messing with"

'Some pussy assed fuck from the city is what's in front of me right now" Blake took off his shirt "I'll take you right here right now"

'Stop, both of you right now" I jumped in between them both a solid wall of well built muscle "Kain get in the damn house we'll finish the conversation in there" I pushed him he didn't even sway. "Kainâ! Leave it let me talk to Blake" the muscle in Kain's jaw flickered before his eyes dropped to mine "I'm sorry okay, no please" Kain huffed a little and stepped back from me and knocked shoulders with Blake as he walked toward the house.

"He wouldn't even stand his ground what kind of man is that" Blake scoffed under his breath.

Falling into Place

"One I care about" I punched Blake in the chest "How dare you try to come in to the middle of a fight you know nothing about!"

"He grabbed you Megan no man should ever touch a woman like that"

"Hey news flash buddy they do" I snapped "and he did it to stop me swinging first, just be thankful he stepped down because your sorry ass would have been in the dirt" Blake looked at me "Stay out of my business Blake this is the second time I've warned you, stick to the two dollar slut that did this to you seems more your league" I pointed to the hickie, the words killed me to say because I liked Blake a lot probably more than I should, he was the don't give a damn guy that I liked. I moved to go round him he blocked my way

"Say what you want Megan, you're lying about something and I will take him down if I think he's hitting you" I started to laugh.

"Oh if only you had a clue Mr. Walker, if only you had a clue" I looked at him "people do what they need to do to make it through Blake and I'm not talking about working two jobs and getting drunk with friends" I was shoulder to shoulder with him "Life deals the cards and how I wish I'd had a sweet hand like that dealt to me" I took a deep breath "The only difference between me and Sally is I don't fuck any male that blinks at me, we're all whores to something" I wanted to tell him everything for some reason I wanted to but having two of us in danger was enough more than enough to handle. I put my hand on his face "Trust me when I say Kain is the least of my worries" I pushed up on my toes and kissed Blake, his whole body tensing up for a minute before he kissed me back. I pulled away from him "Go to bed cowboy" I walked toward the house Kain was standing on the porch watching us his arms folded across his chest he offered me his hand as I got to the steps, I smiled weakly at him and took the hand. .

Chapter 21: naked in the bathroom, and in the bed

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !. Kain pulled me to the bedroom with him and laid down with me on the bed I put my head on his chest.

"We can't keep doing this Meg"

"I know, and I'm sorry for what I said" I lent up on my arm and looked at him "But you need to get out and find place Kain"

"Not that simple honey and you know it" I nodded "It was more important that you got away safely and I needed to make sure you did"

"You could have just called instead of showing up" I felt a tear roll down my cheek

"Hey we said no tears remember" he wiped it away

"I don't like sleeping alone and you're the only one I've ever" he held my face

"I don't like you not being there either when I wake up" he smiled "I need to go shower I'm knotted up" he got up

"When are you going to go?"

"Tomorrow even though I said I wouldn't be reachable by phone he's called and let a voice mail" I sat up and watched him brace his hands on the end of the bed "Something's happened and he needs me back As soon as possible" I felt panicked "I've checked and it's nothing to do with the picture it's about some deal going bad"

"Kain"

"I know" he walked round to me and kissed my forehead "I'll be in contact with you but I'm not going yet" he smile and backed to the bathroom pushing the door closed behind him I heard the shower come on "OH HOLY FUCK !.WOW" I got off the bed and ran into the bathroom Kain was Butt naked standing on the side of e tub "Meg stay back it's a huge assed spider.

"Jeez you scream like a girl" I grabbed a wad of Kleenex from the vanity and reached into the tub trying not to grin at what I was eye level with, I squished the spider in the Kleenex and tossed it on to the small garbage can by the toilet "Nice ass" I slapped his ass hard enough to leave a hand print

"Son of a bitch" he moaned stepping off the side of the tub "looks well I get my ass slapped and don't even get you wet"

"Every time I see you baby" I laughed walking out of the bathroom and pulling the door closed behind me. I looked out of the window in the living room Blake was walking toward the barn, his shirt slung over one shoulder. Was this how I was going to have to live my life now, with only Kain having my back because it wasn't fair or right to drag anyone else into it. I lowered the blind and walked into the bedroom.

I picked up Kain's clothes from the floor; this man didn't know how to fold a thing. I put them on the chair next to the small back pack he'd brought with him. He knew he was going to go back sooner rather than later his gun was tucked inside along with the Watch I'd given him. I picked up the watch and rubbed my thumb

Falling into Place

over the scratch on the glass, from the night three months ago.

"Best gift I ever got" I jumped as he put his chin on my shoulder "Thank you" he kissed my cheek

"Glad you liked it" I sighed putting it back next to the gun I sat on the arm of the chair as he sat on the bed rubbing his hair with a towel the other one draped round his waist "Will you come back?" he stopped rubbing

"I don't know" his face became a little grim "all depends on what happens when I get back"

"What if they followed you here?"

"I think we'd have known that by now" he sighed easing back against the pillows and putting his arms behind his head "as soon as I know anything I promise I will be in touch with you"

"Does Carter know where I went?"

"No, I'm the only one that knows and it's going to stay that way" He shook his head. A silence fell between us that was a comfortable one, we knew each other inside and out and didn't have to talk to be saying anything to each other. He knew where I stood with him and I knew how much he could do for me. "So Blake?"

"What about him?" I pushed off the chair and got into bed covering him over with the blanket, he put his hand under the covers and eased up pulling the towel off of him. Lay on my back and he turned on his side.

"I know I wasn't in the bar long but, his hands were on the girl with the belt for a skirt and the good legs" he added with a smirk I turned my head and raised an eye brow "but his eyes were on you"

"Us" I corrected

"No, I was watching for a good twenty minutes outside the bar and he never took his eyes from you?" he poked me in the shoulder with his finger I looked back at the ceiling

"Okay did you see the way I was dressed and how everyone else was dressed in that bar tonight? try that was why people were looking" I shrugged

"Whatever that cow boy's hot for you" I rolled away from him and curled up

"Night Kain" the silence was back in the darkness as Kain turned the lamp off on the nightstand. I felt him move and his arm pulled me back against him

"Well he was I saw it, Meg men want you sweetheart"

"Not all men Kain" I sighed "Not the right ones anyway? always the bad boys that end up with me in their beds? You did"?
"â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !"

Chapter 22: Suspicion

I slipped out of bed leaving Kain sleeping soundly. I dressed and pulled my hair back into a ponytail before leaving the house and heading across the grass toward the main house.

"Good morning" Jessi called out as she lead her horse from the barn

"Hey" I walked over to her

"So when do I get to meet Kain properly" she giggled

"You can go into the house if you want he's in bed" He mouth fell open "Oh watch if you pull off the covers he's naked" I laughed walking away from her

"He's Oh God" She swung up into the saddle I turned round and looked at her

"He'll behave I promise" I grinned

"Hey Chase" she called out waving at the bunk house and kicking the horse to move toward it her cheeks flame red. I turned back and carried on to the main house I stalled a little as I came round the pool and Blake was sitting on the patio with Sean an a pretty red head Sean's hand resting on the neat round bump under the long flowing dress she was wearing

"Well hey" Sean smiled at me "I heard you were quite a hit in the Rig last night"

"Well I danced on the bar and fell off in six inch heels so I guess you could say something like that" I lent on the back of the chair that Blake was sitting in.

"Well at least you got caught" the girl smiled at me "I'm Silvia by the way Sean's wife" she offered me her hand

"Meg, the tumbleweed that's blown into town" I laughed shaking her hand "I'd better get into the house and help out nice to meet you" I walked into the house. Joanne was already working on breakfast.

"Mornign honey" she smiled at me "Have a good night with Kain?" she chuckled

"Oh yeah" I nodded as I started to fill juice glasses

'So how long have you and heâ ' she stopped flipping the pancakes

'Eighteen months I've known him we've been close for the past tweleve" I put the juice back in the fridge and took out the eggs and began to crack them int o a bowl to scramble.

"He's a very handsome man" she was watching me

'Yes Ma'am" I carried on adding the milk and the butter and whisking them together

"So no proposal from him?... I mean I was seeing my husband for six months before he asked me" I laughed and dropped the egg into the hot pan and stirred them

Falling into Place

"It's not a relationship that will end in marriage" I shrugged "It's complicated" I chewed my lip "He's leaving today anyway so" I turned away from her actually hearing myself say he was leaving hurt.

"He came along way for one night" she pushed

"He got a business call so he has to be there" I put the eggs into the warmer

"Oh so is he's a Doctor isn't he?" I felt panicked, Kain and I hadn't talked about what he'd told them last night

"Yeah" I grabbed the tray "I'll go put these on the table" I took the tray of juice glasses outside and put them to the side Blake was sitting in the chair his brother and sister-in-law had walked down toward the barn hand in hand.

"I'd better get going" Blake pushed up out of the chair "Meg" I looked at him

"Hickies pretty deep it's purple" I smiled weakly I tried to keep my eyes from his lips, I'd kissed him the night before for a reason that had scrambled my dreams while I lay in Kain's arms.

"Yeah well" He rubbed the side of his neck like he was trying to rub it away.

"Hey sexy you left me in bed" Kain called from the path as he walked toward the house. I watched the look of pure anger flash across Blake's face. He grabbed his hat and headed off the patio.

"Blake you wanted to say something" I caught him as he stepped off.

"forget it" he ground his teeth as he spoke his eyes on Kain

"Problem Cowboy" Kain smirked

"Yeah you" Blake strode away

"He's a jerk" Kain sighed putting his arm round me

"Ease up Kain these people don't know anything do they" he looked at me and shook his head. "You having breakfast?"

"If that's okay and then I'm going to leave I've got a flight out of San Antonio at ten thirty" I looked down "Hey" he lifted my chin. "No tears okay"

"I'll come with you"

"Hell no" he snapped "I'll come back I'll call you as soon as I know anything" he pulled me to him holding me tightly "You have to keep going and carry on and dance on that bar" he chuckled

"If you don't come back put it like this I'll come there and bring you back to me" the color drained from his face "You're being fucked over you need to see it" he pressed his lips to my forehead

"I do sweetheartâ I do" the door opened from the house

"Good Morning" Joanne smiled at Kain

Chapter 23: TALKING TO A HORSE!!!!

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !. Saying good bye to Kain and watching him drive away felt like I had been ripped open and had my insides scrapped out. I stood at the porch on the old ach house watching even after he was long gone part of me hoping he'd change his mind and come back, I had a really bad feeling for what he was going to go back to.

"Hey earth to Meg" I took a deep breath as Jessi waved her hand in front of my face "Momma just told me that Kain left" I nodded "I'm sorry you only got one night with him"

"Me too" I looked at her "take my mind off it please" I laughed

Well you can come bush out a couple of the horses if you feel like it?" she linked my arm

"Sounds like a plan" I nodded we both walked across to the barn, Jessi was chattering about how to do what to the horses making me thing there was no way in hell I was ever going to get on the back of one especially when she showed me a scar on her side from falling off and needing surgery. "here you go this is Scout" she stopped me before a black and white horse that seemed to narrow its eyes and look at me "He's a ladies' man he hates the guys touching him Only Blake can, he's got a funny way with horses, I guess it's the vet thing he's got going on" she patted His neck "scout this is Meg, be nice she's going to brush you out" he nudged her pockets "she laughed and pulled out a mint life saver "See he's trying to freshen his breath for you" she chuckled "here" she handed me an a brush and showed me how to bruxh him and whee he liked it the best.

"You talk to him"

I talk to all the horses it helps when the humans around here want to shove their opinion down yhour throat these guys don't judge" she shrugged "and they know how to keep a secret" she laughed

'Hey Jessi you want to run into town while I take the pies into Miss Hesta from Momma" Reid put his head round the door of the stall Hey Meg Sorry your boyfriend left so quick"

"I was going to take Megan out for her first ride" Jess started to shake her head

"What?" I dropped the brush earning a snort from scout "It's okay you go with him into town I'll be good with my feet on the ground. I'll just maker a conversation with Scout here"

'Are you sure"

"Hell yeah" I nodded "I'm just fine with it"

"We'll go swimming later in the creek" Reid called out this time you're getting thrown in" He pointed at me and laughed Jessi put down the other brush and hurried out with her brother I kept brushing. Scout turned his head and looked at me

"What" he nudged me "You want me to talk to youâ ! I feel a little silly talking to a horse" I smiled rubbing behind his ear , he was so strong but right now so gentle as he went back to munching in his food. "I wish I had a life like you" I sighed "Noting to worry about other than when dinner was and as long as you didn't get the fat guy riding you" I brushed and stroked, brushed and stroked down his back "It's killing me with him not being here he's the only one I can talk too, he's the only person that knows everything, and it sucks because I don't think I'm going to see him again" Scout shook himself and looked at me "I know crazy right, but you

Chapter 24: Cowboy's choice

â lâ lâ lâ !. I think I had a death grip round Blake's waist as he walked the horse down a slope heading towards the creek, my chest pressed tight against his back making me wonder if he was doing it on purpose. His horse splashed through the creek sending up a spray of cool water that felt amazing against my hot skin.

"Erâ ! how far are we going?" I asked as the horse was kicked into going a little faster "and can we slow it down I didn't know I was supposed to wear a sports bra" I groaned.

"Well that's and image" He chuckled

"Hey" I squeezed him because I wasn't going to let go to Gibbs slap him. We came through the trees to a paddock with more horses in it. "Are these all part of the ranch as well?"

"Yes ma'am" he nodded

'Damn how many horses do you guys have?"

"Mustangs we have about forty the Race horses and thoroughbreds we're talking we own eight we stable another ten" he rounded the fence at the top of the paddock and we dipped into the trees again and the welcome coolness of the shade.

"I thought all Ranches in Texas have the cows with the huge horns and an oil rig in the back yard"

"Well that's stereotyping at it's best" he chuckled

"Hey mid west girl here I was brought up on Dallas re-runs give me a break"

"Wow I really do not know what to say" He pulled back on the reins and his horse stopped "Okay you feel like taking a walk, there's a stream just over there" e pointed over to the left.

"sure" I nodded "but one question"

'Okay?" He looked over his shoulder at me

"How the hell do you get off one of these without breaking bones?"

"Are you kidding this coming from the girl that danced on a bar in heels" he reached round and offered me his arm "Okay hold me and swing your leg over and I'll lower you down"

I held on to him and did what I was told and he set my feet down I had to smile at the cotton of his t-shirt seeming to strain against the huge taught bicep of his arm. He swung himself down and patted the neck of the horse as it wandered to a lush grass patch.

"so you said something about some cold water"

"What?" He was looking at me his head cocked a little to the side "Oh right yeah" he put a hand in the small of my back and moved me in front of him we walked in silence over to the stream the clear water running over the stones in the bottom the shards of sun light coming through the trees making the top of the water glitter. I smiled and kicked off my shoes and stepped in to the water

Falling into Place

"Damn this is cold" I laughed stepping gingerly on the wet rocks under my feet "But it's good"

"Why did you kiss me?" I stopped walking and closed my eyes "I mean that was the last thing I expected from you"

"I don't know why I did it" I turned slowly to look at him "Well I doâ sort of" I held up my hands "I wanted to I guess"

"You wanted toâ you kiss me and then you go get into bed with and other guy" he raised his eye brows

"I guess" he wasn't wrong I mean I had slept with Kain after the kiss.

"And you don't see a problem with it?"

"No, I've never been one to mess around, if I want it I go for it"

"And you have the nerve to say something about Sally" he paced on the bank

"I said I go for what I want not lay on my back to get what I want, I wanted to kiss you so I kissed you" I got out of the water "there is a difference"

"Kain saw didn't he?" I nodded "That why his ass got out of here?"

"If only" I muttered closing my eyes "my relationship with Kain isâ different put it like that"

"What he's into you hooking up with other men? Or is he looking to have a threesome, because if you're looking at me for that you're sadly looking in the wrong place" I pulled a face

"He's not into that an neither am I" I walked up to him "Kain isn't an issue on me kissing you he didn't even say anything to me about it" that probably was because we were too busy killing a spider and talking about him leaving and me trying not to have a breakdown about it. "Something's in my life haven't been easy and sometimes I need a distraction"

"So you want me for a distraction"

"That didn't sound right" I groaned "I have a lot of things in here" I tapped my head "I sometimes need to release whatever I've held inside, that's why I run,, but last night things happened and I saw you and you pissed me off butting in and I ended up kissing you" I shrugged Blake was looking at me like I'd gone crazy

"You're a confusing woman" he rubbed his hand over his jaw

"You didn't seem to complain and I felt you kiss me back even if you knew kain was watching"

"Yeah well" he chuckled "he's an arrogant ass that put his hands on you"

'So you thought kissing me back was showing him how rto treat a woman"

"Something like that" he nodded "And I wanted to and I want to again"

"Really"

Falling into Place

"If Lover boys' not around and he wasn't man enough to stop me last night then I take it you're fair game" I raised my eye brows, Blakes hand suddenly snaked round my waist pulling me sharply against him his mouth claiming mine hungrily. I pulled back and glared at him "What its okay for you to kiss me but when I do it to you its wrong" he pulled me back. "You don't want this tell me" I was lost for words, he was the same as the guys I seemed to always go for demanding and wanting but still different "so you going to tell me not to kiss you again" his hand reached round the back of my head and gripped my hair pulling me back to him in a kiss that literally took my breath awayâ !..

Chapter 25: Mixed emotion

I pushed Blake back from me my breathing coming in ragged gasps my face already sore from the day old stubble on his face, the intensity of his eyes was so sexy, I had to look away. I turned from him and sat on the bank my feet in the water and pushed my hand through my hair, I was leading him on; I couldn't do this to him.

Kain's image flashed into my mind making me catch my breath it wasn't an image from last night it was from the night three months ago and pain anger and hurt on his face as he looked at me, I could remember where we were, the time and what I was wearing right down to the color of my nail polish, that night was going to haunt me forever.

"Meg" Blake's shadow fell over me

"I'm sorry" my voice was shaky at best "I shouldn't have"

"Shouldn't have what?" He sat next to me

"Kissed you" I lead you on" I glanced at him

"I just kissed you" he nudged me with his shoulder

"I should" I got up

"Should what" are you feeling guilty about Kain?"

"Why does everything have to come back to Kain" I shook my head "No I'm not feeling guilty about Kain, You need to find a girl right for you" I went to step away from him he caught my arm

"What if that girl is you?"

"You just met me Blake, and I'm not a good choice"

"Why don't you let me be the judge of what's right or wrong for me" he shook his head not letting go of me

"Because I know what I am and I have a lot of skeletons in my closet that aren't nice" I sighed "You're a nice guy, a little arrogant and somewhat of a hot head, good looking and smart and you have an ass you can bounce a roll of quarters off" He smiled at me

"Well thank you and I'm glad you noticed" he pulled me to him "I want to kiss you again I want to get to know you" he rested his hands on my hips "we've all got secrets and pasts that we're not proud of and you've got" I held him for a start but I'll move in on a woman who kisses me the way you did"

I felt torn he was arguing with me about something I knew I had no will power over and that was a strong man taking control. I never had done since first dating guys in high school right up to" I closed my eyes

"I want you" He murmured at my ear "I'll see what I want and I go for it" I swallowed hard

"Hey Blake" Blake" Reid came through the trees "Oh sorry" he smirked as he looked at Blake and I stood so close daylight wasn't able to be seen between us. "Blake the Mare's struggling right now foaling and it's a

Falling into Place

quarter of million dollar Bred mare"

"I know I'm coming can you take Meg back to the old house?" Blake didn't move back from me

'Sure"

"Erâ ÷ I'll walk" I eyed Reid's horse as he pawed the ground "He looks a little pissed" I felt my fingers tighten on Blakes shirt with nerves. "You guys go and make sure the horse is okay. I'm sure I can find my way back" the boys looked at each other and smirked

"I'll take you back" Blake chuckled

"No Blake I'm being serious you need to go and see to the horse okay"

"You working at the Old Rig tonight?" I shook my head "Dinner then just me and you and we lay out some of the skeletons"

"Noâ ÷ I can't lay them out" He cocked his head "Seriously I can't and it's not because I wouldn't it's just safer this way" I put my hands on his face "Go see to the horse" I moved away from him and past Reid.

"What the hell are you doing with herâ ÷ she has a guy you know and Momma will string you up by yourâ ÷"

"Save it Reid I don't need you lecturing me" Blake swung up in to his saddle "You have your life don't get into mine"

"Don't fuck her up" Reid caught his arm as he went to ride by

"Me, she started it" Blake kicked his horse and it a full gallop and headed off toward the barn where the mare was.

â ÷. I walked through the mustang barn Scout put his head over the door and huffed at me. I walked over to him and scratched his nose.

"You're pretty cool aren't you" I sighed "Damn Scout I'm in some trouble boy" he nuzzled my side "I don't know how to say no"

"Hey Meg" I jumped as chase walked into the barn "How's your day?" he lead a horse into a stall and closed the door.

"It's not brilliant" I walked away from scout "But then most days aren't"

'You coming swimming later?"

"I don't know I might just have an early night, I didn't sleep a whole lot last night" I went to the door

"Well if your man traveled all the way from where ever he came from just to spend the night with you it must have been worth it" He laughed I walked away, it wasn't even worth going there with him, because how could I even begin to explain who things were between Kan and I.

I went into the old house and looked at the clock that sounded it's deep tick resonating round the room. I sat on the couch and picked up my cell phone from the ide where I'd left it. My heart jumping a little as I saw

Falling into Place

there was a text from Kain.

*New Message*Kain* landedâ heading 2 Webers TTYL XO*2.23pm*

I looked at the clock it was almost five and we were in the same time zone, what was happening I curled up on the couch and hugged one of the pillows to me the sound of the clock lulling me to sleep my eyes losing the fight to stay open my phone held in my hand waiting for it to ring to talk Kainâ lâ lâ lâ !

Chapter 26: Losing my mind

â lâ lâ lâ lâ !. I jolted awake as the phone rang in my hand. I answered it.

"Me * Kain

Kain * sounds like I woke you

Me * where are you?

Kain * lay in my bed, where are you?

Me * on the couchâ ! Kain please tell me you're okay

There was a slight chuckle

Kain * I'm talking to you so it should tell you something

Me * you know what I mean

Kain * Weber is going nuts you've left he's torn apart the club and the house trying to find any sign of you

Me * I've been gone for two weeks and now he's looking for me

Kain * he thought you were shopping on the west coast remember and when you didn't come homeâ !

Me * if he only knew I was four miles away in your apartment all that time till I moved here

Kain * He questioned me for an hour if I knew where you were

Me * I don't like it Kainâ ! Please walk away I'm not there now

Kain * I know that I promise I'm out soon

Me * leave tonightâ ! come back here

Kain * I need a few days to tie things upâ ! hey the mattress is comfortable

Me * good

Kain * what's wrong I know it's more than Weber and me

Me * it's Blake

Kain * what's he doing

Me * kissing me

Kain * he's paying you back for kissing him last night

Falling into Place

Me * I like him

Kain * I knowâ so what are you going to do about it

Me * I don't know, I mean I shouldn't butâ

Kain * you like the go get it and take me now kinda guy and I think that rough assed cowboy seems like one of those guys

Me * Gee thanks for that

Kain * baby I know you inside out remember

Me * I shouldn't go near him if I get found out he'll bein danger

Kain * how are you going to get found out I'm the only one that knows where you are

Me * because I don't think the ends f the earth are far enough to be out of James reach

Kain * you have to live your life

Me * with my history

Kain * yes with your history I love you butâ

His phone beeped

Kain * I have to go that's Weber

Me * call me back

Kain * I'll call you in the morning baby okay

Me * Okay

The phone went dead and I sat up and put my head in my hands. The door knocked and opened I looked up.

"Hey Sleepy head" Blake reached in and flicked on the light I squinted my eyes against it

"What time is it?" I groaned

"Almost eleven"

"Damn I was out for a while" I rubbed the back of my neck

"Well Jessi and Reid came and checked on you and you were dead to the world" he walked in and closed the door I got up from the couch and put my phone down

"Ohâ hat happened with the horse?" I walked into the kitchen and poured a glass of water

Falling into Place

"She's all good now" he smiled "healthy foal snuggled up with his proud mommaâ I swear some of the high strung horses make tings hard for themselves" I put the glass in the sink

"So dinner?" I faced him "I have a picnic basket filled with Momma's chicken and potato salad and a few ice cold beers sitting in the creek waiting for us"

"It's eleven at night" I laughed

"Oh and I suppose you've always been a good girl and not done anything wrong" he wiggled his eye brows at me

"Oh I so wish" I sighed

"You need to come eat I'm not going to take no for an answer I will carry you there if needs be"

"Fine" I pushed off the counter and he opened the front door

'Don't you need your phone?"He pointed to the table

"Noâ No one's going to call" I sighed and shook my head and stepped out into the oppressive heat Blake closed the door and we headed across the grass to the creek lightning bugs danced over the water as we got close to it. "I expected there to be a bunch of people here tonight"

"They headed into town to the bar to celebrate after the foal was born"

"And you didn't go with them?" he shook his head

'I had to make sure he was doing okay first" he shrugged "A vets jobs one that's twenty four seven" he looked at me as he reached for a blanket that was folded ontop of the picnic basket and he spread it out for us. The chatting was easy and nothing in particular was part of the conversation as we ate. Blake leant back on his elbows the lamp casting him in shadow. "You want to go swimming?"

"I didn't bring my bathing suit"

Neithe did I" He looked over at me and smiled

"Is that why you brought me here to get me wet and naked"

'Well that's an image" he chuckled "And yes and no, I want to do both of those things to you, but I want to know you because you're so damn guarded" I looked away from him

"We talked about this, this afternoon remember, its better you don't know about me you just need to know it's not good and no I wasn't a hooker or a stripper before you even go there" I pointed out "Things just are not good" His shadow fell over me and his shirt landed next to me on the blanket. I couldn't not look at him

"I know we talked about it this afternoon but I don't care I still want youâ I want to get to know you you're bugging me in a good way He stood in front of me "Now it's too hot out here to stay clothed and to not get in the water" He dropped his jeans and kicked them next to his shirt "Come on and how about I share some of my past with you" he walked backwards to the water lightning streaked the sky in the distance.

"I'm good here" I shook my head

Falling into Place

"No I think I'm going to come get you" he started to walk forward I scrabbled to my feet laughing "You need to get in the water"

'Hell no" I dodged round a tree he went the other way and grabbed me he pulled me to him his mouth found mine in and instant as I felt the rough bark of the tree against my back. I moaned into the kiss as he pressed his body to mine. He backed off leaving me gasping a little

"That wasn't getting me in the water" I gasped

'No but I have sat with you for almost an hour and had to kiss you again" he smiled "Now you need help getting the shirt and shorts off" I shook my head and pulled my shirt over my head and pushed my shorts down "Hot damn, that's some fine underwear" he rubbed his hands together. I looked down at some of the expensive underwear James had brought for me when we were together.

"Well what's the point of having something boring" I walked by him

"Well that's far from boring" he chuckled watching as I waded into the water I caught my breath at the coolness

"You're being boring Cowboy you got me half naked and wet and you're still on the bank" I His face was a picture as I sank to my shoulders.

"I don't get you" he walked into the water "I've known hot and cold but damn, you do it so well"

"you need to stop trying to get into my head because I keep telling you it's not good so let it go" I sighed "What do you want?"

"Oh that's loaded question" he walked over to me his hands slid round my waist "Because I'm supposed to be a southern gentleman"

"You haven't been one of those since I arrived" you've annoyed me, you've called me names, your girlfriend has tried to get me to break my neck tossing a drink on the bar, she planted this on your neck" I ran my fingers over the hickey " you butted into a conversation I was having" I pulled me tighter to him in a jerking movement his hand moving up and unfastening my bra I raised my eye brows at him and his eye fixed on mine as his hands dragged the straps down my arms "Now you're wanting to see if sally is anything like I am"

'Oh I can tell you she's nothing like you" he tossed the bra from the water "Well if I'm not a gentleman then I get to do this" he nipped at my neck I arched against him as his hands took firm control of my body the way I wanted him to

Chapter 27: Hot and not so much....

Blake was more in control than I thought even possible, he wrapped his hand round my hair and pulled it hard enough just to expose my throat to him as his other hand was under me my legs wrapped round his waist.

"We're going to the old house now" he murmured nipping my ear.

"I'm naked" I moaned as I felt his fingers slip inside of me

"Oh I know that" he chuckled "But it's either there or it's on the blanket and I know the others are going to be back from the bar soon" he moved his fingers inside me making my breath catch in my throat.

"I think we need to leave"

"Yes Ma'am" he smiled at me. We managed to grab the clothes that we'd shed all but my bra and in the dark it was next to impossible to "Hey" I looked put as I pulled on his shirt "we need to hustle" he pointed to where there was a few sets of head lights heading toward the barn he reached for my hand and the two of us ran through the trees laughing, he opened the door to the house and stopped and looked at back toward the creek the first signs of a fire in the pit out there were visible.

"You want to go back out there?" I trailed my fingers down his chest "Or you want to finish what you started Cowboy?" he turned his head and looked at me. He walked into the house and closed the door pinning me against it and pulling the shirt off and tossing it on the couch.

"I'm going to finish believe me" he kissed me with urgency and total desire.

I lay in bed totally spent my entire body ached in a good way, it was a release I'd needed for a while, Blake walked in from the kitchen with two beers and held one out for me.

"You doing okay?" he smiled as he got into bed and pulled the sheet up over his waist.

"I'm fine" I took a drink "I'll say one thing" I smirked

"what?" he narrowed his eyes at me

"Impressive"

"Why thank you Ma'am" he tipped an imaginary hat and took a long hard drink from the bottle.

"You're going to have to leave before dawn, last thing I need is your Mm finding you in here with me"

"We might still be doing things at dawn" he trailed the cold bottle over the skin of my stomach

"Erâ news flash I start work at dawn" I bit my lip at the feeling of the icy bottle

"So do I" he tipped the bottle dropping beer into my belly button and lowering his mouth to it I arched my back as his tongue snaked over my stomach I ran my hand through his hair and the licks got lower "But I plan on going to work exhausted and spent" he reached up and put the bottle on the nightstand with one hand as the other hand eased my thighs apart.

Falling into Place

"do you always have his much stamina?" I teased as he hitched up my leg running his hand down the outside of mt thigh

"Oh yeah" he pushed his hips forward "Are you always so good" he chuckled pulling himself almost all out before rocketing forward making my hands grab his ass holding him there I Moved quickly cathing him off balance and rolling on top of him and sitting up my hands flat on his chest and ground my hips in a circle his fingers gripped my hips and a hiss came through his teeth.

"You ain't seen nothing yet" I bent my head kissing and nipping his jaw bone, his cell was in the nightstand next to the beers and started to ring

"I need to get that" he moaned

"I'm not stopping you I ran my tongue over his nipple as I rotated my hips on him

"Damn" he reached for his phone and groaned as he saw the caller I.D. "Hey Mommaâ No I'm in bedâ Momma we just had a new foal I'm not going to hit the barâ" he looked at me as I increased my pace on him "Oh Godâ No, not you Momma" he shot me a look and shook his head. "Sean's coming why it's almost two amâ What have you doneâ" he sat up making me stopâ Okay I'll get dressed and meet you at the house" he hung up the phone.

"Bolting are you" I sighed moving off of him

"Momma has a bee in her bonnet about Sean" he rubbed his hand over his jaw "One way to kill the moment talk to your moter while getting ridden by a cowgirl in training" he flopped back on the pillows as I got up frm the bed and pulled on my robe "I'm sorry"

"Hey I'm okay" I shrugged, hell it wasn't as if this was the first time I'd been stopped half way through and the guy Had left, all be it the last time it happened I was on a yacht moor in the harbor in Monaco. I walked round the bed and picked up my drink and sank it

"You're pissed"

"I'm fine"

"I smell bullshit" he sat up

"Well I know I'm fine with it. If you can't deal with a girl falling down and begging you to stay for once then you're going to have to work on that because I'm not one of those girls" I frowned at him

"So if you're not bothered about me leaving you in the middle of the night why are you being so hard about it"

"Oh cowboy this isn't nearly me being as hard as I can be" I smiled at him I leant down and kissed his cheek "Better run before your Mom comes looking for you, I need this job" I put the bottle down and walkd into the bathroom and closed the door behind me. I sat on the side of the tub and listened to him walking round picking up his things and the soft click of the front door closing after him. I ran my hand through my hair, I'd done it my will power had left the state and I'd taken what I wanted from Blake and now I had to face him as I worked, how awkward was this going to be because this could be the one and only time it happened, it wasn't worth the risk first to my heart if I got attached to him and his life was worth more than just a roll in the hay so to speakâ lâ lâ lâ lâ .

Chapter 28: Table turned and gone wrong

â lâ lâ lâ lâ !. Blake walked into the kitchen of the main house.

"Coffee?" Sean was in Uniform leaning against the counter, Joanne in her robe at the table

"Sure" Blake nodded "and what the hell sis I need to get out of bed for"

"Well one it was probably a good thing you got out of bed with Sally" Joanne looked at him. He sat on the counter top and took the coffee from Sean.

"Okay just so you know I wasn't with Sally" he sipped the coffee. Sean and Joanne exchanged glances

"Whatâ ! I wasn't with her and I don't think I'm going to be again"

"Okay what you going celibate?" Sean laughed

"No and is my sex life the reason I was dragged out of bed because I know right now where I'd rather be" Blake looked at both of them.

"What do you know about the guy Megan had here?" Sean folded his arms over his chest

"He's an ass and I have a feeling he hits her or at least verbally abuses her" Blake narrowed his eyes a little "Why?"

"well he told me he was a Lawyer and Megan told me he was a Doctor" Joanne got up and refilled her coffee cup "So I asked your brother to look into it"

"Seriously" Blake got off the counter "Okay I don't like the guy I'll be the first to admit that but it's none of our business who's warming her bedâ !" he stalled as he said it, realizing what had come out of his mouth, and realizing it bothered him that Kain wasn't even there and he was still topic of conversation

"I want to know who flies all the way from the upper mid-west for less than twenty four hours" Sean paced his hand on his service weapon at his hip "I mean is she that good in bed he'd come this far just to reconnect" Blake looked down and pinched the bridge of his nose he knew his mom would see right through him if he even tried to lie about whose bed he'd been in.

"If he's abusing her then we shouldn't let him on to the ranch I mean he could be some insane nut job" Joanne looked and Blake

"Okay my heads not into listening to this all I know is this guy means hell of a lot to her I've seen er in tears over him and he watches her like he'd take down any man that breathes in her wrong"

"Well you'd better watch your chaps Bro" Sean laughed "I've seen the pool of drool from you when you look at her and hell I don't blame you she's well Different and sexy bit don't tell Sylvia I said that"

"Boys" Joanne groaned and shook her head

"I'm going to try to get some sleep before I start work" Blake put his cup in the sink

"do you know why she moved here?"

Falling into Place

"No Momma" Blake sighed "You're the one that gave her a job and now I'm going to bed" he walked to the door and cut across the grass he headed for the bunk house and then veered off and came to the old ranch house and opened the door, I was lay in bed my cell rang as he was halfway across the living room.

Me * hey, am I glad you called

Kain * it's gone wrong

I sat upright in bed my heart thundering in my chest

Me * whatâ Kain are you okay?

Kain * I'm in trouble Meg and it's bad, he knows

Me * FUCK where are you I'm coming to get you

Kain * NO STAY THEREâ I need you to meet me at the San Marcos municipal airport in a couple of hours

He groaned

"Me * Kainâ

Kain * Meg just be here baby please, I'm calling in a favor from a friend to get there

He sounded out of breath

Me * you're scaring me

Kain * Meg it's going to be okay, I just need to get out for a while and lay low

Me * I'll be there, Damn Kain I need you

Kain * well it's a good job we understand each other then sweetheartâ I have to go

Me * love you

Kain * you too

The phone went dead and I got out of bed and paced the room. Blake pushed his hands into his pockets and backed out of the house closing the door silently irritation and the feeling of being used creeping up his spine making him want to screamâ lâ lâ.

Chapter 29: Tantrum throwing Cowboy and trouble ahead

â lâ lâ lâ lâ !. My head wasn't in any fit state to function so how I managed to drive from the ranch to the small local airport in the next town was beyond me I'd seen Blake walking toward the barn he had stopped and looked round but I was more concerned with getting to Kain and finding out what had happened and where we stood. I had four hours till I had to be working his flight was due in anytime in the next 30 minutes, as my foot became lead like and pressed the gas peddle to the floor the car responding easily to my touch. Everything in the airport was dark apart from the runway was lit up like a Christmas tree, a guy stepped out and opened an barrier for me and I pulled round in front of a hander with the door open the sound of a jet engine winding down hit me as I stepped out of the car and saw the sleek white plane turning in the hanger.

I waited as the door opened and steps appeared a women in her mid forties and immaculately dressed stepped down in towering heels and a perfect Gucci suit and clipped her way over to me

"Miss Miller"

"Who's asking?" I'd never taken a liking to women talking down to me after the years of my mother doing it

"I am" she cocked her head "We have a mutual friend"

"Sorry sweetheart I don't have many friends and believe me I'd know about you"

"Meg its okay" My eyes shot past the woman's shoulder to Kain he was leaning heavily on the rail down

"Oh God" I shot forward the light from the plane illuminating him "What the hell?" he eased down some guy coming after him with a case Kain literally fell into my arms, the smell that hit me turned my stomach I knew he was hurt. I wrapped my arm round him

"Jon put the case in her trunk she'll need it" the woman directed as she walked over toward us "You know we could have gotten that seen too" she touched his face

"I know Amelia" he smiled and half grimaced "But Megs can do it and you need to head for the Bahamas so they don't know anything"

"Alright" she sighed and kissed his cheek "Take care of my boy Megan" I raised an eye brow at her as she got back on the plane along with the guy that had put the case in my car

"Who the fuck is that?" I growled

"Jealous"

"Of her she's old enough to be my Mom" I scowled as we eased over to my car and I opened the passenger door for him "and I have real tits" I reached over him and fastened his seat belt.

Yes you do" he tried to chuckle and ended up squeezing his eyes together in pain "Damn"

Falling into Place

"Let's get you home" I kissed his cheek and closed the door hurrying round to the driver's side and getting in, I turned the wheel and my foot hit the gas leaving 'Amelia' and in the rear view mirror. His breathing was shallow gasps.

"She's my step mother" he said quietly

"What?" I frowned

"Amelia she's my step mother" He turned his head and looked at me

"I wasn't asking" I shrugged

"Hmmm okay sweetheart" he closed his eyes and reached for my hand to hold as I drove back to the ranch.

"what happened Kain?"

"Can we do this in a little while" he opened his eyes again "I will fill you in but I'm not feeling so good right now I have a bullet in my side and we need to get it out"

"Jeez Kain" I turned into the drive of the ranch killing the head lights so not to draw attention to us. Reid and Jessi were walking from the one barn heading to the other. I got out of the car and helped Kain out and into the house "Go get on the bed. I take it that the case is first aid stuff" he nodded and walked slowly over to the bedroom I went back outside and opened the truck pulling out the case.

"Hey" I jumped and spun round, Blake was standing there.

"Hi" I put the case down

"Out early?"

"I had to go get something" I fidgeted from foot to foot "Is everything okay?"

"I guess, he shrugged his shoulders "I was going to come back to bed with you"

"Well I think we just have other things happening right now" I picked up the case again "I need to go get ready to start work" he caught my hand

"Is that blood" he pointed to my shirt where there was a blood stain from where Kain must have lent on me

"I don't know" I said quickly pulling away from him and clamping my arm to my side "I really have to get ready"

"I'll come over tonight"

"NO' okay well that came out way to fast. I wanted him in my bed again doing the things he was doing before, but what I wanted had to wait, Kain was my priority end of story "I'm working at the Rig" I added feeling my cheeks flame red.

"How about I take you to work and bring you home"

Falling into Place

"I'm not sure" I shook my head "I've kindaâ" I tried not to look toward the house but I did.

"Well I guess I know where I come in the pecking order" he snapped turning on his heel and stalking away, well if he wanted to act like a two year old then he can go in the corner and do that. I walked in and closed the door and went into the bedroom. Kain was lay on the bed without his shirt on a patched up wound on his right side.

"Oh shit Kain" I sighd

"you up to doing this" he looked at me

"I can do it" I nodded "Then I need to go to work so people don't find out about you being here like this".

â Blake walked into the main house

Hey honey" Joanne smiled at him

"Just so you know He's back with her and all I know is there's blood on her" h turned back around and walked back out rubbing the back of his neck, I walked toward the thoroughbred barn, work was his only calming influence and he wasn't even sure that was going to work this timeâ

Chapter 30: Side of a Bullet

I shut my mind off to the fact it was Kain with a bullet hole in his side. I'd managed at least before I was told to stop to train as a nurse what now felt like a million years ago but in truth was only 3 years ago, I'd love my job as an ER nurse, and it was the biggest issue I'd had with my ex when he told me I wasn't going to do that, but James Weber wasn't a man that took no for an answer on anything.

"You got everything you need" Kain moaned as he watched me go through the case of supplies

"Damn what did Cruella De'Ville do raid a hospital?" I looked at him as I drew anesthetic into a syringe

"She's not that bad" he smiled a little

"Hmmm" I walked over to him

"You just have a wall up" He gritted his teeth as I injected round the wound "You're a hard woman"

"Kain I'm not going into this when I'm trying to dig out a bullet" I took a deep breath and turned back to the case and pulled out the equipment I needed and the dressing pads and swabs. I worked on Kain he buried his face into a pillow as I took clamps and pulled out the bullet, cleaning out the wound and dressing it cleaning up all the bloody pads and sheets and pushed them into a trash bag. I picked up the glass it's dropped the bullet in and took it into the bathroom and rinsed it off. My fingers taking away Kain's blood I frowns as I saw something on it etched in perfectly I held it in the light and felt sick, I staggered back and dropped it in the sink. I leant against the wall.

"Meg" Kain called from the bed room I reached into the sink and picked it up and walked back into the bedroom, Kain looked grey

"Hey" I smiled and sat on the side of the bed "It wasn't in all too deep I have a feeling your rib stopped it, and it broke the bone" I rubbed the back of his hand

"Thank you" he turned his hand and took mine and squeezed it "I knew you could do this"

"Yeah well it's a switch off mind set" I held out the bullet he reached for it

"Held together well" he trailed off "Damn" he looked at me

"well they always say somewhere there is a bullet with your name on it" I shrugged taking it back from him "at least I know where the one with my name is" I got off the bed and stripped off my shirt and shorts and tossed them in the garbage with the other bloodied things

"This is a mess" he ran his hand over his face and looked at me as I pulled on a short light summer dress.

"I have to get to work" I looked at him "Take those pills they'll going to knock you out for a few hours, I'll come and check on you in a while"

"Meg"

"Kain" I held up my hands and shook my head "I just had to pull a bullet with my name on it out of my best friend let me try to digest that for a while" I bent and kissed his forehead and watched as he took the tablets.

Falling into Place

One of the hardest things I'd ever had to do was walk out of the door and leave him on the bed.

I went to the house, Joanne wasn't in the kitchen and nothing was set ready to go. I frowned and moved round the kitchen like a robot putting on the coffee pots and setting the oven.

"Oh I'm so sorry" Joanne burst into the kitchen pulling her hair back in to a ponytail "I was talking on the phone and lost track of time"

"It's okay" I tried to smile and found I couldn't muster one she stopped and looked at me

"Honey you're shaking" I looked down at the knife in my hand that I was about to cut oranges with I put the knife down and wrung my hands. I felt the tears roll down my cheeks and splash on the back of my hands I pulled out a chair and sat down everything from sleeping with Blake to doing what I had to, to Kain hitting me like a brick "Awâ ¯ honey what the devils wrong?" Joanne pulled out a chair and sat facing me taking my hands.

"I'm sorry" I sniffed wiping my hands over my face "I have a lot going on" yeah like finding a bullet in Kain and sleeping with your son the little voice screamed in my head.

"Anything you need to talk about?"

"Kain came back and things are just complicated" I took a deep rattling breath "It's okay if he stays with me isn't it, you don't have to pay me it should cover him being here if you keep the money right" I felt panic gripping me.

"That won't be necessary" she shook her head "But you have to answer me one thing" oh crap! "Kain, are you getting abused by him"

"WHATâ ¯ hell no" I shook my head getting up from the chair "I'll start making the biscuits"

"I won't let a man on my ranch if he's hurting and abusing women" she got up and followed me to the island in the center "I'll take out my rifle and shoot his sorry ass" I braced my hands on the stainless steel Island and lowered my head.

"I swear to you Kain wouldn't ever hurt me" I looked at her "He's not like that at all, there's just problems back where we're from" she put her hands on her hips

"You in trouble with the police?" I started to laugh "It's a serious question"

"No ma'am we're not in trouble with the policeâ ¯ It's a personal reason that I really can't and won't go intoâ ¯ If you don't want me here I'll understand and I'll leave"

"Now I didn't say that but I will be watching for cops showing up and Kain doing something he shouldn't"â ¯ lâ ¯ lâ ¯ !..

Chapter 31: Unraveling

Work that morning was a little strange and strained between Joanne and I, but I think it was more me being so nervous. I took the plates from her and stepped out into the patio and put on the face I'd perfected to be a front and smiled at the four guests that were already sitting at the table. I put the plates down in front of them and looked up Blake was talking with Reid and Sean half way between the barn and the bunk house. Reid looked at me and touched Blake on the arm all three of them turned and it felt like I was being scrutinized I hurried back inside the house.

"He's in the bed" Sean folded his arms over his chest "I mean passed out dead to the world"

"Just what I wanted to hear" Blake rubbed his hand on the back of his neck "that ass in her bed" Reid a Sean looked at him "what did you find?"

"Well considering He was in bed with a huge dressing pad taped to his side, I'd say the blood you saw on her was from him and there was a bag full of bloody gauze and things like that"

"What the hell, Did you manage to find anything on Kain price?" Reid asked

"Nothing at all he's a ghost everything I tried came up blank so he's either Dead, Illegal or he's lying to her" Sean shrugged "I found a few interesting things though" he dug into his pocket and pulled out his cell phone scroll through the pictures" he handed it to Blake. Blake pulled up the first one.

"Damn that's one hell of a ring" you think it's real?"

"I don't know but if it is she could probably buy this entire ranch and stock with that and the rest of the jewelry I found in a roll in her dresser" Blake flicked to the next picture

"Is that a BULLET" Reid was wide eyed

"Yep the scary thing about it is this" Sean took the phone and moved to the next picture,

"What the hell is going on that's her name on the side of the bullet" Blake paced "That' fucking son of a bitch he's going to see what happens when you try to hurt someone like her"

Blake stop" Both Sean and Reid grabbed him "With finding all this stuff I need to look harder into him and her so we can get to the bottom of it, I took some of the bloodied gauze to at least try to get a DNA match to find out who the hell he is"

'So we let her and him hole up in there together?" Blake pulled out of their hold "This is bull shit she' not safe with him"

"And she'd be safer with you I suppose?" Reid smirked

"She'd be safer with a bunch of rattlesnakes in a bag as a pillow than him"

"She loves the guy she needs to make the choice for herself"

"Really if she's so in love with him how come it was me between her legs last night, her bed I was in when Momma called me" Reid and Sean stalled "I need to get out of here for a while" he pulled away from them

Falling into Place

and walked over to his truck getting in and slamming the door.

"Ever had a feeling our brother's met his match with her?" Reid sighed

"Trust him to want probably the only girl he can't have" Sean shook his head "I'm worried something bad is going to happen"

I left the house and took clean linens to the smaller of the cabins to get it ready of a group of girls coming in on a bachelorette party later that day I wanted to get it done and finished so I could go and check on Kain. I stopped to latch the door on the way out Reid walked over toward me.

"Have you seen my brother?" I shook my head

"You were with him first thing this morning; I've been working all day. Why?"

"He's not too happy right now" I had a dreaded feeling that it was down to me

"I'm sure needs a night with Sally" I walked round Reid

"He'd rather have one with you" I stopped walking.

"I never thought your brother would be the type to kiss and tell" I put my hands on my hips

"I never thought you'd be the type of girl that would play two guys" He shrugged

"I should slap you down for that" I walked back over to Reid "But I'm just hoping you forgot your manners and brain, Don't question anything I do Reid you don't know me and you don't have the right to judge anything I do, I answer to myself no one else" he looked at me.

"When I see my brother so mixed up over a girl I think I have the right to say what I want"

"Think it; don't say it because I'm not a girl to take things lying down, this bitch bits when threatened" I shook my head "I liked you're now you're an ass" I carried on toward the house not trusting myself to look back at Reid.

Blakes truck pulled up outside of the bunk house as I came down the path. He got out and headed toward me, my heart leapt into my throat.

"So you like to talk about who take to bed?" I bit out before he could say anything

"What?" he frowned at me

"I just took crap from Reid about apparently my morals I take it in your family it's okay for the guys to bang the ass from any girl they want but girls have to be at a different standard, well listen to me cowboy, I don't give a damn what you or your brothers think of me lets get that straight" I could lie convincingly I'd had enough practice.

"That why you've got him back in your bed?" he tipped his head and looked at me. "Was it even cold from me leaving?" he snapped

Falling into Place

"I warned you I have more skeletons in my closet than the local graveyard has and not to try to dig into my head Blake and you're going there, you couldn't just go with it could you, you couldn't just take me as I am" I pinched the bridge of my nose

"Tell me about the skeletons and make me understand you, believe me I'm not going to change my mind with how I feel about you" Okay wasn't expecting him to add that at the end

"I can'tâ For your own safety and for everyone else's I can't do it"

"We can look after ourselves" he caught my arm "I'll fight to keep you" I frowned at him

"Keep me? You slept with me once"

"And I want more, regardless of what people say and you're not in love with Kain because if you were you wouldn't have let me touch you" I looked down

"I have to go Kain's not well" I hurried round him

"Why would he be if he's taken a bullet?" the entire world seemed to go into slow motion for a few seconds, I didn't look back at Blake I walked into the house and closed the door behind me. How the hell did he know Kain had been shotâ lâ.

Chapter 32: An Allie???

! I walked right to the fridge and pulled out a beer and sank it and cracked open another and took half of that down. I rubbed the back of my neck

"Hey" I jumped and spun round Kain was leaning on the door frame "It's not even noon and you're drinking"

"Get your ass back in bed" I walked over to him "You look like shit"

"I love you too" he put his arm round me and I walked him back to bed, he sat down wincing as he did

"Let me look at it" I reached for the dressing pad as he lay down Kain took my hands making me look at him "Kain"

"Why the beer?"

"Rough morning at work" I pulled my hands from his and reached for the dressing pad

"Why?"

"I'm getting a little hassle from a few people over a few things I've done" I eased off the dressing and got off the bed to open the case with the spare medical supplies.

Oh shit Meg what have you done" he chuckled and then groaned and coughed

"That'll teach you for thinking I've done something" I sat back down on the bed next to him "Well at least you were a good boy and didn't open this up again" I re dressed it and reached for the pain meds.

"Meg, what happened?"

"I slept with Blake last night" I sighed "I have no willpower" I hung my head

"You have no willpower with guys that take control" he smiled "You like the guys that tell you how it's going to be in the bedroom" he reached up and touched my face.

"Yeah and look where that's got me" I put my hand over his against my cheek. I kissed the inside of his wrist and got off the bed and walked to the dresser and pulled the drawer open to get out a clean shirt. "Son of a bitch" I turned round and looked at Kain.

"Wasn't me I didn't do it" he frowned

"Blake's been in here"

"what?"

"This is undone" I picked up the jewelry roll from the drawer

'Oh My God you have over four million dollars in diamonds and gems in a dresser drawer" he groaned

"Well I'm not going to wear them to make people's beds or work the bar" I Sighed fastening the roll back up

Falling into Place

"You still look strange without that ring on your finger"

"Diamonds aren't everything Kain" I slipped the ring onto my finger "This one means three years of not being me, being a pawn in a game and James's bed mate. Why was I so stupid Kain" I looked at him as I pulled the ring from my finger

"Because you had nothing but him by the time you needed to get out" Kain shook his head

"I had you for the past eighteen months"

"Yes you have and you've got me forever girl" he lay back and closed his eyes "Do I need to kick the cowboy's ass for you?"

"Yes sweetie as soon as you can get out of that bed and run with me round the ranch" I walked over and pulled the covers over him "I can handle him I promise you, if nothing else James taught me that at least" the door knocked. I walked over to it and went over to it. "Blake get out of my way" I stopped at Jessi was standing there

"It's me not the jack ass brother of mine" she smiled nervously she looked over my shoulder at Kain who lifted his arm and waved at her a little "I heard a few things and sometimes my family are total assholes" I stepped back and allowed her to walk in. "Thanks. Look I like you you're a down to earth person that I know is good and"

"What have you heard?" Kain called out

"You're beating Meg" we both walked into the bedroom to him "Oh what happened?" her eyes got wide as she saw the size of dressing pad on his side

"I got shot" he groaned, I put my head in my hands as I sat next to him on the bed.

"Shot"

"Yep" he nodded with a slight smirk "you want to see my scar"

"Oh god Kain" I rolled my eyes "Hitting on the poor girl already", Jessi got wide eyed "Such a man whore" I wanted to get off the subject of what had happened with Kain, because it all led right back to the reason I was here. I looked at my watch. "I have to get ready for work" I got off the bed and walked to the bathroom "Jess" she looked at me "I swear to you Kain's not doing anything wrong, stay and keep him company if you like"

"You don't mind?" she frowned

"No it'll keep his ass out of trouble"

"I'll go to the house and go get some food if you'd like?" she flushed a little as she spoke to him

"Sounds good" I could tell he was getting tired, Jess walked out of the house. I put on my makeup and pulled my hair back, went back into the bedroom and stripped out of my clothes as I pulled a top and shorts from the drawer.

"Please don't do the pillow talk with Jessi" I sighed as he watched me get dressed

Chapter 33: Louisville slugger

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ ! For some reason my hand rested on my stomach as I drove to work, the words Kain had said playing over and over in my head as I headed toward town. I realized that Kain and I had dodged a bullet several times, we'd never been careful when we had been to bed together. I looked down at my hand and shook my head moving it to rest my elbow on the sill of the door and rubbed my forehead, hell I needed to get to a doctor because Blake and I hadn't been careful either. Damn I was an idiot three years with a man I knew couldn't have children had made me complacent, lack of will power for men like James and Blake was going to be my downfall and with Kain, with Kain it had beenâ ! I squeezed my eyes closed for a split second, memories threatening to make me turn round and head back to the ranch and to Kain's arms for safety, but I wasn't sure what was safe anymore I was the reason he'd gotten shot, I was the reason James wouldn't care who got hurt as long as he got to me.

I turned off the engine as I pulled into the parking lot of the bar I leant my head back against the seat and took a few deep breaths everything was a mess right now, the fact Blake had been in to the house and found the jewelry I had was irritating me especially as Kain had been in there passed out. I got out of the car my heels again high as hell making the clicking sound on the concrete. I pulled the door open and stepped into the noise of pool balls hitting each other and the juke box blaring out something I had no clue who was singing. It was early but it was already filled with guys that looked like they'd put in a hard working week and were planning on a long partying weekend to make up for it.

"You came back" J.D.'s voice boomed over the bar sounds.

"Why wouldn't I?" I smiled at him full game face on pain and fear pushed aside as I went behind the bar and put my purse away. "Just because I almost fell on my ass for a great height. It takes a lot more than that to stop this girl" I walked over to a guy waiting and took his order. The night seemed to fly by with me talking and laughing with customers getting hit on more than once.

"Word of warning" I looked up at the sound of J.D.'s voice, "Your girlfriend pulls a stun like the one he other night with the drink on the bar and you're both kicked out, do you understand Blake" Blake's eyes met mine and held them his jaw tense.

"Don't blame me for Sally's shit J.D. she's a big girl and makes her own choices"

"Yeah well Meg's will be the one allowed to throw her ass on the curb if she does it again" J.D. turned away to serve someone else" as Blake moved down the far end of the bar and sat on one of the stools. I walked over to him.

"What can I get you?" I put a bar napkin in front of him

"Just a beer"

"Momma not teach you Please and thank-you's" I smirked as I turned away from him and poured his drink

"How's lover boy doing?" I put the drink down in front of him

"I don't know ask your sister I let them together in the house" I watched his jaw go slack for a split second. "Or better still" I leant over the bar even in the heels needing to get on to tip toe he frowned before moving closer to me "You should have asked him yourself when you went in to my house and went through my drawers" I pulled back sharply and walked away from him, if I hadn't he'd have been wearing his beer.

Falling into Place

I stayed away from Blake side of the bar feeling his eyes watching me with every move I made. I glanced up as I washed glasses and saw Sally walk in and guys watch her and seem to snigger a little before going back to what they were doing. She looked at me and then looked at Blake and walked over to him where Reid had now joined him. She tapped him on the shoulder making him look round before she planted what had to be the sloppiest kiss in history almost on his mouth. Reid made retching faces. I shook my head and wiped my hands.

"Hey Meg" one of the guys I'd been talking called me over "You need to get on the bar girl and dance"

"He's right" J.D. Smiled putting a pitcher of Beer on the bar, it's the first slow time since your shift started and it's already after midnight"

"Okay I'll dance if I get t pick the song at Least"

"Hey Honey seeing your sweet face up there means you can do whatever you want" one of the guys called from over by the pool table, Blakes head hipped round and shot him a look that would have killed if it were a dagger. Sally had somehow got herself situated between his legs as he sat on the stool and was pushing her ass back into his lap moving in time to whatever song was playing at the time, Every time I'd looked at Blake he'd been looking at me and each time he saw me look at him he made sure to look like he was interested in something sally was saying or doing, and for some reason it was really bothering me his hands were now dangerously close the her crotch on her shorts. "Hey earth to Meg" the guy Chuckled

"Whatâ Oh Sorry" I smiled as walked round the bar and Used the stool to help get on to the top of it "Okay Boys and girlsâ Y'all now I ain't county" I called out as I walked down the bar and people started to whistle and clap as I put on my best drawl "But I have to admit I think I can pull off" I bent down in front of Sally and Blake "Excuse me" I smiled sweetly as I could at a seething Sally and I took Blakes hat from his head and put it on my own and stood back up "See" I got another round of whistles and Cat calls and a few high fives from some of the girls I'd been talking to I stepped over Reid's arm and crouched by the juke box "But this is about as country as I get" I hit the two buttons and stood back up "But it's as mean is I can be when I'm Pissed so FYIâ" I looked right at Blake "Don't Piss me off" I reached over the bar and pulled out a baseball bat as the song startedâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !..

http://www.polyvore.com/dont_piss_me_off/set?id=51006347

Chapter 34: Part of the secret comes out

â lâ lâ !.. I felt amazing up on the bar making the most out of the song making people laugh and sing along. Even J.D. was singing. The song ended to the sound of whistling and clapping as a guy offered his hands to me and lifted me from the Bar before high fiving me.

"I'm going to have to raise your wages if you entertain my customers like that" J.D. hugged me and took the baseball bat from my hands.

"OOO I like the sound of that" I grinned

"Still amazes me you can get up there in those heels and work all night in them"

"Years of practice" I giggled as I went to serve someone.

"She's a slut" I heard sally whine "She took you hat, you need to get that back"

"You need to chill the heck out" Reid pointed his bottle at sally "Meg was having fun all be it at my brothers expense"

"Both of you quit it" Blake got off the stool moving Sally out of the way

"Blake" She caught his arm "You look tense"

"I am" Blake looked over at me where I was leaning at the back of the bar watching him and his little plaything. "Come with me now" He grabbed her hand the delighted grin spread across her face as he headed for the side exit, she looked over her shoulder at me and childishly stuck out her tongue.

"Wow" I tipped blakes hat back on my head and smiled before carrying on serving, my hands gripping the glasses tighter my answers not so long and friendly, I must be worrying about All the things happening.

'You can be done for the night Honey" J.D. walked over to me "I'll close up"

"You sureâ ! I do have some thing waiting for me to see to at home" I chewed my lip as the door opened and Sally walked in her clothes looking like she'd rolled out from behind a dumpster, the razor rash round her mouth had her looking like she'd had fat from her ass pumped into her face. "Okay I'm going to go" I hugged J.D. "do you need me tomorrow?"

"Only for a few hours between three and six honey if that's okay"

"I'll be here" I nodded I grabbed my purse and pulled my Cell Phone and keys out as I said good bye to a few people.

Kain * hey

Me * sorry di I wake you?

Kain * I'd just drifted off

Me * you in pain??

Falling into Place

Kain * not really Jessi only just left

I started to smile and laugh

Me *damn such a ladies man

Kain * bite me

Me * and you told me you didn't like when I did that

Kain That's because you damn well hurtâ You done with work

Me * Yeah I'm heading home right now

Kain * long night?

Me * worrying about you anda few things yep seeing Slutzilla all over Blake was just the cherry on top of the Cows ass.

Kain * you're so Midwestern sometimesâ you sound jealous

Me * and the meds are making you delusional

Kain * I know you inside out Megan.

Me * I'll be home in twenty minutes

Kain * I'll be the one waiting in bed for you

Me * Smart ass

I hung up and pushed open the door to the bar and stepped out into the oppressive heat, Maybe I'd take a detour on the way home via the creek.

"what was that about?" I jumped as Blake stepped out from the shadow.

"Jesus seriously are you trying to kill me" I gasped "And what was what about?"

"The bar, the song" I smiled and dropped my purse in to my car and turned round to face him

"What I was given a tip and asked to get on the bar" I shrugged as I rested my butt against the door of the mustang "It's called doing my job" he stalked over and braced his hands either side of me, I didn't flinch.

"You know damn well what I mean" his voice was a growl. His face inches from mine, I smiled at him

"Okay you got meâ It was directed more at you're girlfriend" I trailed my fingers down his chest "But also as a warning you don't mess me around"

'Me don't you think that's a little fucking rich with him getting in your bed" I tipped my head

Falling into Place

"He has a name" I hated when people were arrogant and ignorant especially where Kain was concerned "And how do you know he's in my bed?"

"Because you're fucking him like you fucked me" he snapped

"I think you'll find it was you doing me and what business is it of yours what Kain is doing? Back off from thinking about him or you'll be sorry"

"Are you kidding me some jumped up city boy" My hand made flat contact with his face

"You don't know half of it so don't even try to be high and mighty Blake, Kain is the only person in my life that knows the whole me" I felt tears sting my eyes. "I'd die for him because he'll take a bullet for me" I pushed Blake back and wrenched open the door.

"Even one with your name on it" Even in the heat I felt my blood run cold "I've seen the bullet Megan" I closed my eyes "what the hell is happening?" his voice softened I felt his hands on my arms "I don't understand, I know you keep telling me not to pry but I'm worried about you and I really don't trust Kain" I dropped my head. "Meg"

"You have to know that Kain is the only person I truly trust? there is nothing for you to worry about with him, I swear to you. He'd never ever do anything to hurt me"

"Just warms your bed" I gripped the car door so I wouldn't swing at him again as he literally ground his teeth.

"He makes me safe"

"Does he know about us?" I started to chuckle a little

"What about us?" I turned round and faced him

"What we did?" he frowned

"Yes he does, and it was one off Blake? I can't, I mean you've got Sally and your mom would fire me if she knew what had happened and right now I can't go anywhere"

"For god sake Megan can't you get it into your damn head I like you, I like you hell of a lot and I don't give a damn about Sally, I don't understand the open relationship that you have with Kain and you won't give me a straight god damn answer about it" He looked a mix of mad and confused "Nothing can be so bad"

"You have no clue how bad things can be For some people"

"Tell me Meg make me understand, I want more of you? If he's not such an asshole why is he lying in the bed bleeding"

"Because of me" I looked Blake in the face "see what getting involved with me leads to? The people I'm getting away from won't let me go easily and will kill to get me back Blake the less you know the better" I felt exhausted "The only reason Kain went back was to try to throw others off the trail and you said it you saw the bullet and who it was really meant for, I've done something that put a target on my back"

"You stole the Jewelry?" Blake nodded making me laugh

Falling into Place

"The fact you went through my things and found those is reason enough for me to kick the crap out of you" I snapped "and for your information that stuff is mine it's my untraceable bank roll if you'd like to think of it like money"

"It's wasn't me that went through it" He sighed "I wouldn't do that" I narrowed my eyes at him "Momma asked Sean to run Kain through the System you said he was a Doc and he had told her he was a Lawyer" I slumped a little against the car and held my face in my hands "Kain Price doesn't exist Megâ He's not who you think he is"

"I have to goâ !" I felt sick

"Megan pleaseâ !" I shook my head, I had to give him part of it to make him se the prying had to stop

"Do you know how many red fucking flags got put up because your fucking brother is trying to find out information" I yelled "Do you realize you could have killed both of us nowâ He's not in the system because he's a ghost, he's a government mercenary for want of a better word he has now history, no trail apart from so deep in the Government you need higher clearance than the Commander in Chiefâ Damn it Blake if only you guys hadn't pried" I got into my car and turned the key in the ignition. I looked at a shell shocked Blake "I liked you Blake I really did but I need to protect myself and Kain as much as I can, we've been through too much and risked too muchâ I love him because of what we've come through when I probably should hate him, but it's not now like you're thinking it is" I put the car in drive and hit the gas, I needed to talk to Kain and work out how to get the hell out of hereâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !..

Chapter 35: Confusion and worry

It felt like everything was falling apart, as I drove recklessly to get home. Blake now knew now more than I'd ever intended for anyone to know. Hell Kain and I should have found a desert Island somewhere and lived on damn coconuts. My head throbbed as I drove by the main house the tiki torches were lit round the patio and pool and Joanne was entertaining a group of people, including Sean and his wife. I felt my blood boil but I kept a grip on the wheel ignoring the waves from them. I glanced in my mirror as Blake's truck pulled into the driveway going like a bat out of hell. I pushed the gas pedal kicking up dust as I headed down toward my house.

I stopped and got out not even taking the keys or my purse from the ignition, I ran up the steps and pushed open the door. I heard a giggle and walked toward the bedroom.

"I was only coming back to bring you the Cookie's Momma sent me down with" Jessi laughed

"I know but do you know how lonely it is here when you can only just manage to get to the bathroom and Meg is working" I lent outside of the doorframe in the darkness of the living room, I could see her sitting on the edge of the bed by him, her hands clasped in her lap. She lowered her head "Okay why the long face" I smiled at Kain's tone he was one hell of a sweet guy when he wanted to be.

"I feel so wrong being here when Megan is working?"

"Why, I can't exactly jump up and revish you" It never took much to get Jessi to blush and I could see her profile and he was like a beet "Not that I wouldn't" his deep chuckle resounded round the room followed by the groan from the pain in his side

"Kain, I'm not like that I really like Megan hell she's a breath of fresh air round here and someone I consider as almost my best friend" I caught my breath as she said it. It had been a long, long time since I'd been able to have a close girl friend.

"I don't understand?"

"You and Megan, you can't be here with her in her bed and not" she got off the bed and paced "I'd better go"

"No" Kain caught her hand "What Meg and I are is complicated, and I'm not about to even begin to explain, but you need to know it's okay, hell she has a thing for that asshole of a brother of yours, ask him what they were doing in here last night Meg shall we say has a weakness for controlling men and well no will power what so ever"

"She was with Blake?"

"Yup"

"But you and her" I mean " Kain tugged on Jessi's hand catching her off balance and pulling her to him and kissed her his other hand caught in her hair, holding her to him, I heard a moan from Jessi before I turned to leave. He'd kissed me like that more than once since the night that started it, Kain made a girl forget her own name when he kissed them. I left the house; Tears stung my eyes as I headed toward the creek. My life was a mess a total and utter cluster fuck of people getting hurt.

Falling into Place

My choices had left me alone and on the run, gotten Kain shot and dragged an innocent family in to the middle of hell. I stripped off all of my clothes and waded into the cool water and tried to close off my mind to everything that was going on in it.

"Megan" I spun round Blake was on the bank; I shook my head and looked away

"Go away Blake" I groaned

"Like hell" I waded into the water fully clothed and turned me to face him "You blurt out all of that and then drive the hell away from me"

"Forget what I told you, forget all of it Blake Kain and I are gone as soon as he's done in the house" Blake frowned for a minute.

"He's shot what's he doing?"

"Your sister" I pinched the bridge of my nose before I'd even thought of what I'd said.

"What"

"Blake please just go to bed and pretend we never met"

"Like hellâ and Kain is with Jess?"

"Kain's a good guy so don't even think of saying a wordâ you see the one out back of the bar doing Sally like a cheap hooker" I moved away from him a little taken aback I was so irritated as the image of her walking back into the bar so disheveled flitted in to my frontal lobe.

"Damn it Megan" I was half out the water he caught me again "You want to know why I did what I did tonight?"

"Not really" I faced him and watched his eyes skim down over my body as a breeze blew making goose bumps appear on my skin. He seemed to have to take a minute before carrying on.

"Well I did what I did because of you, because you pissed me off more than any woman has ever done in my entire life, Because I wanted it to be you I was inside of , you I was kissing, You that was Clawing my back wanting more" his eyes seemed intense as he stared at me. "Then you tell me that about Kain and the jewelry you think I'm the type of guy that backs the hell off"

"No but you should be, this isn't a joke" I pulled my hands away from him and got out of the water and grabbed my shirt and shorts and pulled them back on pushing my underwear into the pocket.

"Tell me you don't want me as much as I want you" I groaned "Look at me and tell me Megan, what ever it is we can help you"

"BULLSHIT you can did you not understand anything I said about what Kain was, I wasn't lying. It was the truth. I was turning states evidence about someone and Kain was the one that got me to do it, I'm not just some girl drifting around I'm running because of who I was talking about" My teeth were gritted "And like I said before thanks to your damn brother people are going to know where I am and where Kain is"

"But you said he was something with the government" Blake ran in front of me blocking the way

Falling into Place

"Fuck" I Pushed my hair back "Just leave it Blake" I felt my lip quiver

"How the hell can I what is going on with you and him? Are you just fucking each other" I sat down hard on the ground and pulled my knees up to my chest "Did he force you into talking about whoever it wasâ you're making my head hurt Meg"

"Join the club" I sniffed the tears beginning to fall

"How did you meet him?"

"Kain or James" Blake pulled a Face

"Whoa who the hell is James?"

"James Weber" I shrugged "Google him" I closed my eyes and wanted to go to sleep but I still needed to talk to Kain. "And I'm sure you'll find out a few things"

"You tell me"

"I have to talk to Kain, we can't stay here... his bossâ !" I shook my head "I have to stop telling you everything" I got to my feet.

"Megan" I started to walk away from him "I so wanted to break down in his arms and let him hold me but I couldn't do it to him.

'All I ask is you stop your brothe digging more and more to give us at least some time to leave"

"stay with me tonight" he called out "Kain isn't going to be stable enough to haul ass anywhereâ ! I might be a vet but I understand injuires" I stopped walking

"I have to talk to Kain"

"Then let me come with you" I shook my head "Why?"

"It's not your fightâ !" I left him standing by the creek as I went back to the houseâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !.

Chapter 36: GOGGLE

Blake watched me walk away frustration tensing every muscle in his body, he turned toward the main house and took off at a hard run, spray's of water streaming off his wet clothes.

"Blake what in heaven's name" Joanne looked at him wide eyed as he got to the patio everyone else turning to look at him "You're all wet anâ " she saw the look on his face, the knit of his brows and the hard clenched fists at his sides, He looked round and looked at Sean.

"You with me NOW" Blake walked into the house and slammed the door after him. Sean got up and bent kissing his wife

"I won't be long" he smiled at her Joanne was half way to the door of the house "Momma I'll go" Sean was calm and collected "Something's riled him and we all know his temper"

"I know but the last time you and heâ " "

"This time I have cuffs and a badge and I'll throw his ass in a cell to cool him off if I have to" Sean Kissed his Mom on the cheek "You see to your guests and be thankful Miss. Hesta wasn't here to see him" He winked and strode to the house clicking the door closed after himself. "Really are you such a fucking ass to be like that in front of guestsâ " and get a damn towel you're dripping on the floor.

"Shut up" Blake growled as he waited for the laptop in the counter to fire up "I found out why you found nothing on lover boy in the old house with Megan" Sean straightened at the mention of Kain "And fuck is it a doozy"

"Okay go on" he walked to the side of the kitchen and into the laundry room picking up a towel from the pile folded in there and came back "But first you'll short out the computer if you keep dripping on it" Blake got off the stool

"Okay pull up Google and type in James Weber" Blake instructed as he stripped of his shirt and then his jeans, Everyone on the patio including the group of six girls on the bachelorette party getting a full view of his naked body. Blake pulled the towel round his hips and sat back don as Sean typed and hit enter.

"Okay this isn't him" Sean looked at Blake "This is some Rich developer from Chicago" he clicked on a news story. "Billionaire developer James Weber walked free for Federal court today after several witnesses didn't show in the Trial slated to be the trial of the year. Weber was indicted in several counts of Fraudulent money handling and investment along with two alleged counts of murder and one of Rape on a former housekeeper, in his Florida Ocean side home in the Fall of 2009" Sean read out. "The case was thrown out on the grounds of lack of evidence by the Judge causing uproar in the court. When asked on his view of the events of the day Weber told us all in a brief statement "*When people try to hard sometimes the results aren't what everyone expects, but I'm not everyone and I am a free man, and a man in need of a vacation*". When asked if he'd now be walking down the aisle with his stunning 25 year old fianc e. He replied that she was already overseas waiting for him and he was going after her as soon as he could. This Man seems to have more lives than a cat where the law is concerned, but the shocker her has been that is Fianc e wasn't with him starting society rumors that the trial had put too much stain on their relationship." Sean eased back on the stool and looked at Blake who was looking confused a he looked at the picture of Weber walking free from court looking like his suit was a million dollars alone. "So what the hell does this ass have to do with Kain it's obvious from the picture he's go at least 15 years on Kain in the age department"

Falling into Place

"Go back to the search" Blake's voice was a little strained. Sean clicked back "There" Blake pointed to the screen with the title 'billionaire developer pops the question' Sean clicked on it "oh fuck" he groaned as the words came up on the screen.

"After dating for only six months James Weber has proposed to his Beautiful girlfriend Megan Miller with a huge seven carat pear cut flawless diamond, reportedly worth a hefty \$2.3 million but that's not nearly a dent in his estimates \$1.7 billion net worth. Not much is known about Miss. Miller before she began dating the business man shortly after New Year, but since then she's been a constant companion with Weber at every event and Gala, no doubt there will be a few raised eye brows at the twenty year age difference between the twenty three year old Miss Miller and the Forty three year old Weber" Sean's voice raised an Octave as he scrolled as he read until the picture appeared of James and I at an Event his arm possessively round my waist holding me against his side. The ring on full display as my left hand gripped the black clutch in my hand. "That'sâ I meanâ !" both men stared at the screen

"Oh my god that's Megan" Jessi had walked in the kitchen and made both of them jump "she's MARRIED?"

"No she was engaged to that guy" Sean shook his head no report of them getting married "And how long does it take to take cookies to the l house"

'shut up" She flushed red as Blake continued to stare at the screen "That's guys hot for an old guy" she peered closer at the screen. "What the hell is she doing here if she was engaged to him?"

"That's what we want to know and where the hell Kain fits in to this picture" Blake pulled the lap top more toward him his hands shaking as he hit the back button and typed in Megan Miller and clicked the images button a page of pictures appeared most pictures of Me with Weber at different places.

"Ooooo look at that it looks like a yacht" Jessi knocked Blake's hands out of the way and enlarged the picture and clicked the link next to it. "Monaco home to the mega rich and the beautiful, James Weber's stunning fianc e wears very little on her future husband's yacht moored in the harbor of the tiny Principality in the Mediterranean" I was standing on the deck of yacht wearing a tiny blue bikini.

"Look" Blake pointed to the back ground of the picture where Kain was standing his hands on his hips looking at me. "That's Kain"

"And the guy she's in front of is that Weber guy" Sean pointed to the back of a guy's head in the bottom of the picture. "I'm really not having a good feeling about this"

"No" Blake shook his head "Believe me it's not good"â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !..

Chapter 37: Not running... yet

... I stopped at the side of the house as the front door opened and Jess walked out and down the steps heading over toward the main house, I rested my head on the rough wood side to the house and watched her literally skip back home, Kain had charmed her with very little effort at all, but that meant he liked her normally a woman coming up to him would get blown off he always knew the right women to go for I well sometimes. I stepped onto the porch and pushed open the door.

"Back for more?" Kain called out

"It's me" I walked into the bedroom Kain eased himself up

"What happened?"

"So obvious?" I leant on the door frame

"Well something happened, you called me almost an hour ago to tell me you were coming home, You're hair is wet, you're underwear is hanging out of your pocket, god only knows where your bra is because I'm being pointed at right now and the AC isn't cranked all that high in here" he chuckled holding his side as he did. He narrowed his eyes "And you've been crying" he reached his hand out to me. "Who's pissed you off?" I took his hand and sat on the bed with him.

"Let me take a look at your side" I couldn't make eye contact with him. "I waited till Jessi left" I bent to the case with the medical things in and took out what I needed. "She's sweet I she shouldn't have to deal with my shit through you" I moved to take off the dressing pad. He caught my hand.

"Look at me" I started to shake my head "Meg LOOK AT ME" his voice was more of a command than a request. I slowly looked at him.

"Can you travel? Can you call in your step mom and get us the hell out of here?" I went to get up and pull away from him, even being injured he still had his strength and didn't let me up

"Megan what happened?"

"We got careless Kain, you told Joanne you were a lawyer right?" he nodded "Might have been a good thing to let me in on, she tricked me and I told her you were a doctor" he belw out a deep breath "she called in her oldest son who happens to be a cop and got him to snoop"

"Fuck"

"They found out you don't exist, he came up with nothing and I got called out on it by Blake"

"What in Bed?" My eyes met his "Just saying pillow talk Meg we've had enough of it"

"He was fucking Sally tonight not me, I can't go there again, no matter how much I want to" I gritted my teeth "I can't be me again with anyone"

"You can with me" He rubbed my arm

Falling into Place

"Not what you need, being stuck with the girl you were told to get to turn on her fiancÃ©e for your bosses" he let go of me.

"I'm sorry" He moved toward me "If I hadn't taken the job"

"It would have been someone else Kain we both know itâ they want James and will do anything possible to get him" I took a deep breath "You protected me Kain you didn't let me break when I was round himâ you got me away from him risking yourself"

"Going against everything I'd been instructed to do" he smiled a little "you do know what was suppose to happen right?" I nodded "I couldn't and wouldn'tâ and that's why after what happened threeâ" he stopped the night things between Kain and I became more than just, him being undercover getting information from me about James, killed him to think about"

"I know" I moved forward and rested my forehead against his. "Go, go without me go a long way from here and make a life Kain, he'll come for me and I'll talk him round" Tears rolled down my cheeks "What Sean did searching will have sent red flags up and if your Damn boss managed to send that picture of us to James he'll tell him about it where the search came from and James as well as your boss isn't stupid"

"And you truly thing I'm going to leave you to either pack of wild dogs to findâ Half of these people trained me to do what I do the other half had you so terrified you didn't dare say no to himâ tell me you wanted that ring on your finger, tell me you wanted him for a husband, tell me when he had youâ" I put my hands over my ears making him stop. He reached up and moved my hands "Let me make some calls I have a few friends left in this world" He thumbed the tears from my face "I'm not ready to run Meg, and neither are you. I'm dangerous, you know my boss knows it that's why I was put on the job to take Weber out of the equation"

"And me?" it can out so quiet I had to think if I'd actually said it

"Yes, and you" he looked away from me "But you were an innocent, you were the first person in a long time to even appear human to me, you were so innocent in all of this putting on the tough front, You had nothing but him after your family did what they did because of James fucking Weberâ I did ask if I could just let you leave"

"They know I know way too muchâ" He just nodded "Might be time to blend in Meg, hunker down blend inâ I sleep at night and see all the people I've killed and I can't do it anymoreâ Seeing images of you if i killed you like i was supposed to" He inhaled "I'm tired of being the puppetâ And you know what?" I took a deep breath and looked at him "I kinda wouldn't mind getting to know a certain cowgirl"

"Even injured you still have it" I groaned taking off the dressing pad finally and cleaning the wound again Kain flinching slightly as I did it.

"She's different" he closed his eyes "I need you to go to the bus depot in San Antonio. Locker156" he pointed to the Jacket he'd been wearing when he got here "I need the black Duffel from it." The key is in h inside pocket

"Okay" I dressed his wound and retrieved the key.

"Meg" I looked round at him from the doorway "Let Blake in to your life sweetheart. He's a good guy, an ass but he's a good man" I frowned at him "Okay I had a check run on him" he rolled his eyes "hey if any man is going to take my place in your bed damn right I'm going to check him out" he winked at me.

Falling into Place

"Bit of a mess Huh?"

"Yep, but get me the bag and let me see what I can do." I nodded.

"You and Jessi." he looked at me "look cute together" he flashed me a huge smile as I picked up my purse.
"I'll call when I've got it" I headed out to my car and got in. lol..

Chapter 38: How it started with Kain

I drove out of the Ranch trying not to think of the figures inside the house that were all talking in the kitchen, I knew I was probably the topic of conversation right about now. I tried everything I could to keep my mind empty from reciting the list of drinks behind the bar, to the words to as many Nickelback songs that I could think of but each time I stalled and could the night where things started to change especially for Kain and I, I'd been talking to him and he'd been sending information to his bosses from me about dealings and the shady side to James Weber that I'd heard and learned firsthand including seeing him issue the order to "scrub" one of his failed dealers from the face of the planet.

James had been the type of man you didn't say no to, no matter what he wanted from you now matter how degrading it was even in the ninety degree warmth I reached for the heater at the memory of some of those things I'd submitted to, but this one night was the first time I was willing

The night started like most other nights, nails done in a red tipped French manicure, my make up flawless, one thing James Weber had made plain and simple was I had to be the one that turned heads when we walked into any room be it a club or a party or a restaurant. I fastened the long diamond drop earrings and stood up the dress was to the floor and the deepest shade of red it could be matching my lipstick perfectly. The split at the side of the dress was to the level of almost being indecent but in a classy way if that was possible. Showing everything but not everything enough to make men look and wonder but that was what he liked the ego trip of other men looking at me wishing I was in their bed at night. I picked up the Black clutch from the vanity and looked in the floor length mirror and smiled, I had to admit I did look good.

"Ready baby" James walked into the bathroom and looked me up and down

"I'm ready" I nodded. He had always been a man that turned heads when he was in his twenties now he was approaching forty he was looking at his best his body toned and lean I walked over to him and reached to straighten his tie. He slapped my hands away

"Leave it it's perfectly alright" he snapped "Don't start fussing over me it's irritating" I took a step back "And where were you today I called your cell and you didn't answer?" he ran his hand over his hair and looked at me through the mirror.

"I was just shopping, I didn't hear the phone" I shrugged

"Who with?"

"Myself I don't have friends remember" I regretted the words as they came from my mouth

"That's because they aren't good enough and want something" he scoffed "he turned to look at me and walked over stooping a little to run his hand up my thigh and into the slit of the dress "went to the salon and waxed as well" his fingers delved into me making me grip the wall behind me and gasp "Good girl, the people we're meeting tonight are expectant so make sure you flash a little every now and then" his mouth was at my neck as his fingers were relentless

"James" I moaned "stop"

I knew it was futile no meant nothing to him he was good in bed and he knew it and knew I had no will to resist, my weakness had always been men in total control and James Weber was one of those men only he had

Falling into Place

a side to him that made him different, I'd see him lose his temper with a few people and didn't see things his way especially with his drug deals and he thought nothing of having people killed to have things his way. I'd been on the receiving end of his temper with a broken nose, ribs and bruises to numerous to countâ but where was I going to goâ I had no one my family had shunned me for dating a man as old as James was and for the fact of his reputation. My own Father and Brother had packed my things and thrown me out calling me a gold digging whore, me a trust fund baby from birth being called a gold digger was actually funny but James had charmed me and pulled me in and promised me the world including putting an eight carat diamond engagement ring on my finger filling the papers with the story of a local Business man to wed his young girlfriend to make sure everyone knew I was his.

I Heard the sound of his zipper being pulled down and the dress was pushed up round my hips His fingers were withdrawn. He looked at me

"Damn I get to Fuck you whenever I want" he moaned hitching my leg up

"James we have to leave" his hand went round my throat and he slammed himself into me

'I saw when we have to leave" he growled in my ear "I tell you what we're doing and right now I'm fucking you" the door knocked

"James there's a cop at the door something about illegal parking"

"Deal with it I'm busy"

"He's demanding to see you or he's coming back with a warrant" the door was slightly open I turned my head a little and saw Kain looking at us

"Fuck" James pulled himself out of me and Zipped himself up "Sort yourself out" he snapped at me he looked in the mirror and caught Kain looking "Hot isn't she" he chuckled "Now where's this ass hole cop" he walked out of the bathroom I looked at Kain in the mirror

'You okay?" he asked

"I'm fine" I shrugged "We need to be more careful Kain" I re did my hair and lipstick "I can't not answer the phone when I'm with you" He stepped in to the bathroom and rubbed my arms.

"Well there no reception where you were" he sighed "I hate to see him handle you like that" he moved my hair and ran a finger over the mark on my neck

"It's fine..."

"You trying to convince yourself of thatâ hot rough sex is one thing we all like that, but this is getting brutal"

"Kain it's not going to be much longer is it"

'No they've almost got everything they need" He stepped back as I walked into the bedroom from the bathroom

"Good" I looked at him "Thank you"

Falling into Place

"for what?"

"Interrupting" I smiled weakly

"Damn fucking cop" the door banged open and James walked in and narrowed his eyes at Kain "I thought you'd gone down stairs"

"I asked him to help look for one of my earrings you knocked out" I butted in.

"Really" he folded his arms over his chest "strange how you had those both still in when I left you in there" he cocked his head "You think she's hot Kain?"

"Sir?"

'My future wife you think she's hot" Kain's eyes flicked to me "It's okay many men have wanted to touch her and feel her wrapped round their dicks" I shook my head "women want her too you know?"He seemed to brag

'James leave him alone" I reached for his arm, the slap echoed round the room Kain moved forward

'You want to do something Kain?" James smiled gripping my hair. I looked at Kain and slightly shook my head

'No" Kain backed away

'Well I want you to" Kain raised an eye brow "You see I heard you've been looking and talking to Megan"

'Passing the time of day" Kain shrugged matter of factly

'hmmm" James looked at him "Good looking man isn't he?"

"James stop this" I said trying to get free of him "you have a meeting"

"Meetings can wait Baby" he stroked my cheek "You know I'd like to see your beautiful mouth round his dick" I watched the color drain from Kain's face

"Don't James" I shook my head

"I want to see if it's as good for other men as it is for me" he nuzzled the side of my neck

"I'm not going to touch her" Kain said quickly

"Why she not good enough for you?"

"No I don't' mess around with another man's woman" Kain pushed his hands in his pockets

"Any of the others wouldn't think twice about it, anyone would think you're hiding somethingâ you're not are you Kain?"

"No I just don'tâ"

Falling into Place

"Well I told you it was going to happen so it's going to happen, and she likes it hard and rough don't you baby?"

'James" I was almost begging

"AM I IN CHARGE HER OR NOT" he pulled a gun from his back and put it to my temple "I want you to get fucked by him and let me watch you"

"Stop it" Kain stepped forward; James swung the gun in his direction Kain stalled

"Well get ready to fuck this hot bitch of mine or you both die tonight. I'm irritated that I've had to deal with cops and you stopped me from screwing the ass off her and I'm not in the mood for her now but she needs finishing off don't you baby or you don't sleep well" he kissed my neck "Now get on your knees and show him how much of a good girl you are" He pushed me forward at Kain who stopped me from falling.

"Meg" he murmured

"its okay" I tried to smile at him "It's okay" he closed his eyes as I slowly got to my knees in front of him and opened his belt and eased down his pants and underwear taking him in my hands and stroking him.

"Hold her head she likes that" James instructed as he walked round behind me and unzipped the dress and eased it off Kain looked down at me "Don't come in her mouth though save that for fucking her hard" he moaned as I took Kain in my mouth, his hands instantly going to the back of my head, Kain was here to save me I wasn't going to let him die at any cost

.. My chest was tight as I came back from the memory, it had started something between me and Kain that neither of us could stop I had initiated the next meeting between the two of us, during one of James' "Personal Business trips" his code for taking a client to some hotel where no one knew them and hiring whores to service both of them while leaving a blackmail wide open for James to get what he wanted, I'd gotten out of the house with no one seeing and gone to Kain's Apartment and to his bed

Chapter 39: Pulled over

â lâ lâ lâ !.. The drive home felt like it took no time at all My hand was resting on top of the duffel bag that I'd gotten from the Locker at the bus depot, I had no idea what was inside it but it was heavy and solid. The rain started as I got back into Wimberley, the bar was locked up tight everything seemed closed up and not the warm friendly town I'd gotten know. None of the houses had lights on but it was already after four am people would be getting up for work soon, I got a sick feeling realizing I was one of those people and I knew I was going to have to face Joanne and the rest of the family.

There was the wail of a siren and lights flashing I looked in my mirror as a cop car pulled up behind me, I hit dial on my phone.

Kain * Hey

Me * I will kill you if there is anything in this damn back that will get me arrested

Kain * what?

Me * I'm getting pulled over six miles from the damn ranch

Kain * time to get it under the seat

Me * KAIN

Kain * Shit

Me * I have to goâ ¡ oh wonderful

Kain * What?

Me * It's a certain Sheriff Walker, Blakes brother

Kain * Meg

Me * I'll deal with it

I hung up pushing the duffel in to the foot well on the passenger side as Sean walked up to the car his hand resting on his weapon. I wound down the window

"Kinda late to be out isn't it?" he crouched down and put his hands on the door

"Couldn't sleep, and I wasn't speeding and I didn't blow the stop sign back there" I tipped my head and looked at him "So why the siren and lights" Sean smiled a little

"Just wanting to make sure you were okay"

"I'm just peachy" I watched his eyes skim round the car, the darkness not giving away that there was a bag in the foot well of the passenger side "I should get back and shower and go help out your Mom"

"Is Kain still with you?"

Falling into Place

"Yes and your Mom knows he's here I told her about it"

"I don't want my family getting dragged into anything"

"Well you'd all better learn that it's wrong to pry in to other people's lives without a fucking open invitation, how dare you snoop into his life" Sean raised his eye brows at me "Life too fucking boring here you have to give your donut munching ass something to do"

"You need to watch the mouth there Megan"

"Why you going to slap on the cuffs, because believe me all that does is turn me on" His jaw went slack "I want to get on with my life and so does Kain you have no right to do a damn background check on any of us"

"defensive aren't you when you have a man lay in your bed with a gunshot wound you playing nurse for him or doing to him what you did for my brother" My turn for my jaw to slacken "I know you and Blake knocked boots, Reid found your bra by the pond"

"How do you know it was mine" Jessi checked the label and for it to be that expensive it had to be from the city

"So now you're the sex police. What your wife not giving it to you anymore? I'm twenty five I've been legal for a while I'll fuck who ever I want to why don't you spit out what's really on your mind Sean" This really wasn't going the way I'd hoped and I had the image of me slapped in cuffs put in a police cell, I needed to shut up but my mouth had a mind of its own most of the time. He opened his mouth to say something as his radio crackled to life saying something about drunken kids making pains out the asses of themselves back in town. He got up and walked away from my car getting back into his and swinging it round heading back into town, screw the speed limit and screw the stop signs I was getting bac to the ranch as fast as I could.

I pulled up at the house and got out grabbing the bag and taking the porch steps in one stride. Kain was out of bed and pacing the floor.

"You shouldn't do that you're not" he walked across the room and pulled me hard to him in a hug "Well okay then" I sighed breathing in his deep warm scent, memories of the second time I'd gone to Kain for safety hit me like a hammer buckling my knees.

"Whoa" he eased me down on to the couch "You need to sleep" he frowned at me you're getting the worry line" her rubbed his fingers between my eyes

"I need to get showered and get to work" I moved to get up "I have to keep my mind busy or I'm going to lose it" I looked at him "Sean just got his ass jacked for what he did with the digging about you"

'Jesus Meg" Kain sat gingerly on the end of the coffee table

"Kain get back in bed okay" I got up and pressed my lips to his cheek "I need you" his head spun and he looked at me, the words I'd used more than once to him to help me regroup, his hand went to the side of my face I put my hand over his "I need you, to let me shower and let you work" he smiled nervously a little "Not that I'd not love to" I stopped myself "It's time for Jessi to have a piece of you" I kissed his cheek again and turned to the shower.

"I'm always there for you Meg" he called after me "How about you get some of your own cowboy"

Falling into Place

"Maybe" I watched him pick up the duffel and carry it into the bed room. I wasn't even looking forward to seeing Blake right now he seemed to be able to get me to open up without a lot of effort on his part. I. I. I. I.

Chapter 40: Reeled in

I turned on the shower and shed my clothes I looked in the mirror over the vanity everything on the outside looked fine, but then for the past three years I'd honed and perfected the perfect outer shell. I stepped into the hot stream of water and tipped back my head letting the water hit my face and body. My mind was reeling with the events of the evening, the memories that had been brought back to me some good more bad and one that saved my life and gave me Kain.

I dropped my head and my shoulders shook with the tears, as I tried to think what should have been if I hadn't taken those extra shifts at the hospital and hadn't met James Weber, if he hadn't called me relentlessly and been waiting for me with flowers for the next five days each time my shift was over. I'd been swept off my feet. I'd done a run of seven night shifts and was off when he had filled my locker with roses in every shade you could imagine along with a note asking me for coffee across the street at the diner that was normally filled with hospital staff. What the hell I'd thought coffee after pulling fifteen hours of hell after the pile up on the expressway sound more than good.

Snow was falling as I pulled my jacket tighter round me over my scrubs. I dodged the cabs in the street as another ambulance flew into the entrance way of the ER. it was the morning shifts problem not mine right now. I stomped the snow off and shivered as the heat and smell of Coffee hit me when I stepped in to the diner. I looked round smiling at people I knew and then I saw him sitting in the far booth watching me with a smile on his lips, damn he was good looking even though I knew from his medical notes he was twenty years older than I was. I pulled off my jacket as I walked toward him, He rose from the table his suit probably costing what I earned in a month.

"You came" he tipped his head to the side

"Well you sort of made it impossible to say no Mr. Weber" The waitress came over

"Usual Meg?" she smiled at me

"Please Daph" I nodded as James gestured to the empty seat across from him and I slid in. The waitress walked back behind the counter and came back with the oversized mug with the jet black strong coffee and put it down in front of me and refilled James's cup while she was at it with the regular coffee she was carrying. I wrapped my hands round the cup and took a drink smiling as the hick hot coffee warmed me from the inside out.

"I take it you come in here a lot" James picked up the creamer and added it to his coffee "and it's James"

"You could say that... James" I nodded "Daphne looks after me; I share an apartment with her daughter" I eased back into the seat "So why with the flowers and the being there every day? I'm sure the stitches in your hand doesn't warrant an ER trip daily unless you're thinking of suing my ass for my needlework skills" He rubbed his hand over his jaw and chuckled a deep laugh.

"No, no suing" he shook his head "and the flowers because when I like someone I like to spoil them" I raised an eyebrow "and you I like" He lent across the table "do you know how beautiful you are?"

"What hair in a ponytail, nothing but chap stick and mascara for makeup and a set of blue scrubs?" I laughed taking another drink "I think you might need a CAT scan, I'm a mid west girl that works in the ER"

Falling into Place

"You're Megan Nicole Miller, your Twenty three in five day's time. You gradated Northern high as Class President and Valedictorian. You topped your classes all through nursing school even though your Father wanted you to go into the family Law practice" I was sure my jaw was hanging slack as he spoke, "Three hospitals head hunted you to bring you to their ER's making you the youngest person to head the nursing department in the Midwest. You have an older brother and a younger sister, he's joined the Law practice and your sister is too much like your Mother and likes the high life. You don't need to work at all with the trust fund you have tucked away, but you do anyway" he smiled taking another drink "You dated the head of surgery until two months ago so dating guys older than you isn't really an issue for you. You like men that take charge and know their own minds and I'll bet you like them to take charge in the bedroom as well" he moved over the table closer to me, my breath caught in my throat and my mind and body screamed for him "And believe me I'm going to have you and you're going to be my girl Megan" he sat back and reached into his pocket and tossed a fifty onto the table "You're not working till next week but you're coming with me to Milan"

"WHAT?" I choked out

"You're going to come with me to Italy" He got up and walked round and picked up my coat and held I out for me

"Why would I do that?" I out up without realizing it and let him slide my jacket on for me

"Because I get what I wantâ always" He turned me to face him and kissed me, long hard and deep He pulled back "My car is thereâ" He pointed as a Sleek Black limo pulled up "we'll go retrieve your passport from your apartment and we'll go to my plane don't pack anything, I'll have everything you'll need"

"Butâ" I couldn't think straight .Two hours ago I was clamping a vein with my fingers while the trauma surgeon patched a guy up in the middle of the hallway, now I was here with a man wanting to take me to Italy and he'd already got me so hot and bothered it was like I'd not had sex for a year, he knew all about me and he knew my only weakness men that did take controlâ ..

â . I'd let him take me from the diner and his driver had opened the door for us and I'd gotten into his car. I'd been naked and under him before we'd gotten three blocks from there and I'd never gone back. James Weber had pulled me in and held me there until I had nowhere else to go, he was a manipulator and could get me to do anything he wanted because I was scared to step away from him, until Kain had given me a way out the only way out.

I rubbed my neck and suddenly felt hands slid round my body pulling me back against the hard wall of muscle I knew all to well. The body I'd turned to for safety and security when everything was falling apart with everything else in my life. Kain turned me to face him as the water soaked his naked body my hands moved up his back as he pushed me against the wall his mouth falling to cover mine in a kiss my nails racking his skin. He kissed my neck.

"I'll take away the tears Meg if you need me too" he murmured "I'll do it for you" he hands slid over my body to my ass as he pressed his thigh in between mineâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ

Chapter 41: tough choices

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ ! I closed my eyes as the familiar hands caressed my body, my back arched as Kain's head dipped lower. Thoughts of Blake crossed my mind and my breath caught in my throat at the same time Kain's stopped sucking on my right breast, we both looked at each other. My hands resting on his chest, he opened his mouth, I shook my head, tears seemed to glaze his eyes, I pulled him to me his arms wrapped round my waist and mine went round his neck, the hug meaning more than anything else.

"I'd better re-dress your wound" I managed to croak out I felt him nod and reach behind me and shut off the water. Kain stepped out of the shower his back to me there was no denying the sheer power in the man and he knew how to handle me, He pulled a towel round his hips and picked up a second one as I got out he put it round me.

'things have changed haven't they" he sighed, I looked down and nodded "Blake?"

"Yes" I rubbed my hair on another towel before beginning to brush it "But it's not right for you to put things on hold because of howâ !"

"You know no matter what I'll be there for youâ ! I'd do" I put my hand over his mouth

"I know but we're doing it for the wrong reasons" he nodded "I'll never ever be able to thank you for" He took my hand and lead me back to the bedroom.

"Can we leave it unsaid" He smiled at me as he reached to his side and pulled off the dressing pad carefully, he hissed through his teeth.

"I think leaving it unsaid is the best thing" I smiled as I pulled on latex gloves and checked the bullet hole "Damn you heal well" nurse mode had kicked back in

"Thank you" He put his arms behind his head

'Can I ask you something?"

Depends?" He looked at me

"Do you think he'll come after us?"

"Which ass hole are we talking about?" he looked over at the duffle "My bossâ ! well he won't come after me but he could send someone just like me to get the job done, I'm not going to lie" he put his hand over mine "We need to maybe put some trust in toâ ! Say Jess and Blake and try to work something out as to, well dealing with where we've been and what we've done' I snapped off the gloves and walked to the dresser and pulled out clean underwear and a shirt and skirt and got dressed "meg?"

"I need to get to the main house and see if I still have a job after what happened and me giving seven tons of crap to Sean" I went back over to him and kissed his cheek, "you want me to send Jessi down to look after you?"

"If she takes care of me like she did last night" he wiggled his eye brows

"Nice Kain" I took a deep breath

Falling into Place

"Well you're getting cowboy action so I think I need some cowgirl riding lessons" He squeezed my hand "We good" I nodded He reached for this bag and pulled out a laptop several different passports fell out as well, I wasn't going to ask. I walked out of the bedroom and out of the house. I pushed my hands into my pockets and headed across the grass to the main house, Sean's police car was parked in front of the house and the lights were all on inside. The nerves in my stomach made me want to turn on my heel and run as far from here as I could. I turned the door handle and stepping in to the bright light of the kitchen Joanne was standing leaning on the range er hands wrapped round a cup of coffee.

"Good morning" she smiled but it didn't reach her eyes

"Hi" I reached for the apron I wore while cooking breakfast

"How's the patient doing?" I looked at her and then went to the fridge and started pulling out the things I was going to need

"He's getting thereâ Look, please let us stay just till he can travel and I promise we'll be gone" I blurted out "None of our problems were supposed to follow either of usâ and you're an awesome person and I'm sorry" she held up her hand stopping me from talking

"Honey, I'm not even going to begin to try to understand what's going on, but from how it looks to us you and Kain are well sleeping together and you may as well be married to that rich man" I looked down "Cheating isn't right no matter what's going on" she shook her head "but that's my opinion and hell I know My sons never follow or followed the rules" I took a deep breath "You can Kain can stay here as long as you work for me you're a hard working girl Megan and they're rare to findâ especially after you must have had the royal life"

"On the outside maybe" I shrugged

'did you sleep last night?'

"No Ma'am"

"Then why don't you take today off, I know you got home late from the Bar lat night"

"I'd rather stay busy if that's okay" I sighed with relief at her reaction

"Hey momma there's no towels in the Guest bathroâ !" Blake trailed off as he walked into the kitchen his t-shirt slung over his shoulder his belt hanging lost on his jeans "Hey" I smiled at him a little and turned away cracking eggs into the pan

"You need to go check out the foals again this morning" Joanne said eyeing me and Blake

"I was going to and then I was going to start checking the mustangs we got in yesterday" For some reason I felt a wave of guilt over what had happened in the shower with Kain and I earlier.

"Joanne, I think I'm going toâ well I" I stammered "I'm going to do what you suggested"

"Okay and I'll send Jessi down to the Old house with food for the two of you" I nodded my thanks and took off the apron and headed for the door as quickly as I could.

"MEG" Blake dodged round his Mom

Falling into Place

"Blake" Joanne had a warning tone to her voice

"Momma leave it" He snapped quickly closing the door after him "MEGAN" I stopped just on the other side of the pool "Last night" he stood behind me

"Not pretty the things you've learned Huh?" I couldn't look at him "And that was the nice stuffâ I see not a good bet getting close to this girlâ But Jessi is safe with Kain" I felt Blakes hand on my shoulders and wanted to break there and thenâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ

Chapter 42: Another bombshell

"What about you, are you safe with him?"

"Didn't we go over this" I groaned I opened my eyes I could feel the heat from Blake at my back and the weight of his hands that were rubbing my arms slowly made me wish I was normal and could just have him like I wanted. "Kain is the one person I trust with my life" all because he had been supposed to kill me ironic how I did trust him.

"What about your body?" his tone was clipped

"What? What the hell is that supposed to mean?" I turned around to face him Blake looked a perfect mix of mad and hurt.

"You do know he was with my sister last night when you were at the bar" I felt myself chew my lip

"Yep" his eye brows shot up "apparently your sister gives a damn fine blow job" that stunned him like a slap in the face I looked over his shoulder and saw Jessi looking at me wide eyed and beet red "and why can't he be with her? what difference does it make to me? He's single he's always been single, you all jumped to conclusions and nothing will say your mind from what you decide is right? Get it into this" I poked the side of his head "Kain is more to me than I can tell you right now but it's no longer sexual at all" I was saying this not only to irritate Blake but just to let Jessi know it was okay if she wanted to get to know Kain better I was good with it. "So whatever this Jealous cowboy routine is it's annoying as all hell and you need to get your ass over it" I stepped back from him and looked right at Jessi "He's working right now but I'd say take him some coffee in about thirty minutes and he'll be pleased to see you" She fidgeted and squirmed a little.

"Well? Well? Well look what the gold digging bus dropped off" I spun round

"Fuck" I closed my eyes and rubbed the back of my neck "I must have been a really bad person in another life? Misty a little out of your comfort zone aren't you?" Blake can wait

"Looking a little rough there sister dear" Misty walked toward me

"I'm working?" she looked stunned

"What for novelty value" she narrowed her eyes at me "Weber letting his slut work now? Mother cried for a week when he put that ring on your finger" I watched my sister's eyes go down to my hand that was already pushed in to my pocket "He's old enough to be your father? and mine" she sneered "You look ridiculous with him you do know everyone's laughing at you right"

"Does this look like a face that gives a damn and hell after seeing the announcement that you and that dentist we're getting married you seriously question my taste in men hell Misty no one can say James Weber isn't good looking" I smirked at her "I had a man that turned heads even at twenty years older than me" I walked up to her what's Elliot, twenty eight, he's got the pot belly of fifty year old that goes to the country club every day for lunch and dinner he's got the comb over of some sixty year old pedophile, and sister dear?" I turned her words back onto herself "You have a trust fund that I know increased by just over a million dollars about eighteen months ago, so did Michael's? you think Dad Hasn't called me and told me? you think that the black eye Michael had six months ago came from a gym accident? James did it to him for pissing me off? Now forget you saw me forget you have an sister like Michael has done and Mom and Dad have done" I looked round Joanne and Sean were now stood with Jessi and how Blake was now looking stunned and lost

Falling into Place

his jeans still half undone and his shirt still over his shoulder. "Damn I need a drink"

"You're loss you have no one or nothing if he gets bored of you as his slutâ because you know you are just a toy for him and you turned your back on everyone because of him" Misty snapped after me "You always were different from the rest of the family Meganâ talk about black sheep I'm glad you won't be in my wedding and there is nothing wrong with Elliot he's more of a man than Weberâ more of a man than any of the me you've bedded" That was it I was done the last person I needed or expected to see was my Little sisterâ sorry bitch.

"Go to hell Misty" My hands were ready balled in to fists

"BLAKE GRAB HER" Kain's voice cut the morning air as I lunged for Misty. Blake tackled me round the waist pulling me out of strike range with one arm I struggled against him as Misty grinned a smug grin at me Blake wrapped his other arm round me pulling me against him as I struggled "I think you need to take your sisters advice and forget about her" Kain still looked ill but he was intimidating. "From what I know of Megan she'll kick your ass for everything that's happened and the things you've said in the past about her Miss. Miller" He was being formal and that was when he meant business.

"You one of his goons or you fucking my sister as well?" She glared at Kain

"Oh Sweetheart you really don't want to mess with me or with your sister because I don't play nice" He had his Sexy tone on that made you wonder what he meant by it "You go back to your suburban life going to the country club and shopping with your friends" Kain circled her as Blake held me tight to him and the others watched on "Getting your hair done on Thursdays and you're nails done on Friday mornings, but sweetheart you need to watch your future husband isn't spending your trust fund money when you're not realizing itâ . Oh and Miss Miller" She looked at him wide eyed "I'm not sure who the brunette is that works for him but the underwear that you found in the glove box of his Mercedes was hers" He kissed her cheek and stepped back folding his arms over his chest "Run back to your Bachelorette party Miss. Miller and don't think you can come around your sister again, she has guard dogs that don't and won't think twice about tearing you apart" My hair was half covering my face as Blake still held me and my sister took off heading back toward the larger of the cabins leaving people looking shocked and intrigued at everything that had played out in front of them. The constriction of Blakes arms lessened slightly but he held me still his hot breath on my neck causing a slight distraction to the past five minutesâ lâ lâ lâ !..

Chapter 43: held in place

"Let go please" I said quietly as Kain turned to look at me

"Like hell you're a firecracker" Blake chuckled in my ear "and I like holding you" Kain walked over to us

"Look at me" Meg look at me" Kain was holding his side

"How the hell is she here of all places she comes here" I shook my head "They know don't they? They know where we are Kain"

"Blake" Kain looked passed me to Blake "I need you to do something for me"

"What fucking my sister wasn't enough" Blake snarled at him

"Whatever I just need you to look after Megan for me for a few hours" don't question it you either will or you won't simple as that" Kain shrugged

"I don't need babysitting" I huffed

"You need to sleep honey" Oh great Joanne was in the mix now "Blake take her to your bunk house" Kain do you need anything" I felt the shock resonate through Blake and my jaw went slack

"No Ma'am" he smiled and shook his head "we're sorry about all of this"

"I'll bring you some coffee" Jess flushed red

"Okay coffee sounds awesome" He smiled and nodded at her. Sean stood his hand resting on his side arm as he narrowed his eyes and watched everything going on.

"I just need y keys and I'll get out of here" I butted in

"Like hell" Blake bit

Not a chance" Kain frowned at the same time "Give me digging time baby okay" I took a deep breath and nodded

"Lets go" Blake moved with me "I'm doing this for her not for you pretty boy" He glared at Kain

"Good enough for me" Kain walked away the pain in his face not fooling anyone as he held his side

"Kain" he looked round "two of the pink pills okay"

"I know" he nodded and walked back toward the old house

"Lets go" Blake said again

"I can walk without you holding me" I snapped a little too fast at him

Falling into Place

"I'm not sure you can spitfire" he chuckled "I'll just hold you if that's all the same to you" we got to the bunk house as some of the other guys were coming out, they stalled and raised a few eye brows

"Mornin' Meg" Chase's mouth twitched with a smile "Blake"

"Call me if any signs of issues with the horses" Blake instructed "But other than that don't disturb me"

"Yes Boss" chase grinned "Your Momma know?"

"Get your ass to work" Blake snapped pulling open the door and pushing me into it.

I'd never been inside the bunk house, I expected to see rows o bunk beds and a stove in the corner like in the old movies but instead there was a large kitchen in front of me with a huge rough wood table in front of it doors branched off on all sides with a fligh of stairs going up to a second floor that you couldn't know was there from the outside.

"You want a drink?" Blake let go of me and walked over to the fridge and pulled out a bottle of water

"No I want a real drink I walked to the counter at the side and picked up the whiskey bottle

"It's six am" He stopped with the water bottle half way to his mouth

"And" I took of the lid and took a long had drawer from the bottle I started to pace the floor

'So you have a sister"

"Nope" I took another drink Blake frowned at me

'So that girl out there that looks a lot like you only with dark hairâ ' "

"Is some prissy assed bitch that needs a beat down" I took another drink Blake strode across the floor tossing his shirt on the tale and he took the bottle from me.

"I don't think this is a good idea right now do you?" He held up the bottle

"Yup" I snatched it back from him and took another long drink

"So help me god you think you don't need baby sitting damn girl" he took back the bottle and twisted the cap back on it "You need a damn spanking for being such a pain in the ass"

"Did I ask you to watch meâ ' ; Nope" I slurred a little damn whiskey was already hitting me with the tiredness and the lack of food not helping "And go see your tramp like you did last night I'm not here for you to" he slammed the bottle on the table and before I knew it his mouth was on mine his hands fitted in my hair pulling my head back as his tongue flicked over my lips pushing for access, I groaned into the kiss letting his tongue battle with my own. "Noâ ' "I moaned

"Tell me you don't want this" he nipped my neck "I want you to trust me like you trust him" I started to shake my head "I want you Megan, I want to touch you and hold you and I am going to have you"

I froze words so similar to James and it took me back to the times I couldn't look at him and couldn't think for myself the times I had ran to Kain when I hurt, when I'd been forced to do things I didn't want to do, the

Falling into Place

women he'd made me go to bed with so he could watch and then he'd make me watch as he used the women to make him come. I staggered back from Blake and braced my hands on the table taking deep rattling gasps of air.

"Megan" His voice was soft and concerned

"Oh God" My knees buckled at sobs filled and racked my entire body

"Crap" he caught me wrapping his arms round me and swinging me up into his arms and striding across the floor to the stairs taking them two at a time returned round at the top and banged the door with his ass to open it.

The room was cool and there was a couch with a huge flat screen over a fireplace to the right and to the left was a large timber and wrought iron bed the covers all in black and white as he set me down on it and walked back over to the door and closed it flicking the lock into place. .

Chapter 44: opening up

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !.. I hugged my knees to my chest as Blake moved across the room to a door and walked through it, the sound of clinking cups and then the smell and hiss fresh coffee being made filled the space. I slipped off the bed and walked over to the door and found a small kitchen that was as state of the art as the kitchen in the main house with stainless steel appliances and a granite counter top. The early morning sun coming through the sky light made the definition of the muscles of his bare back seem more powerful.

"I'm sorry" he glanced over his shoulder at me and then looked back at the coffee maker "I meanâ ! with what happened downstairs"

"Am I so unapproachable?" He said without looking at me "I've never been so unnerved and caught off guard around anyone beforeâ ! youâ !" he sighed and ran his hand through his hair "How can one person make you so angry and pissed and at the same time turn you on and make you long just to see them catch a glimpse of them" he poured the coffee into the cups.

"It happens" I sniffed looking at the wooden floor "You get consumed by it but it doesn't always workâ ! things aren't ever what they seem, take it from me I know" bare feet came into view I hadn't noticed that from the get go he hadn't got his trade mark boots on his jeans I knew by the look were expensive but so well worn they fitted him just right.

"Here" I cup of black steaming coffee was held out toward me I took it from him and looked up at him "Things can be whatever you want it to be, you have the right to make those choices for yourself" I smiled and shook my head pushing off from the wall and walked back into the other room Blake walking behind me I sat on the couch curling my legs up under me.

"I meant what I said Megan I want you more than I've ever wanted anything" he sat on the other end of the couch giving me some room "But I know there is more to you and I know there is more to you and Kainâ ! you're all over the internet with some rich old guy and supposedly set to marry him" I closed my eyes and took a drink "and Kain so you say s some government hit man" he sounded tired and irritated "so why is there pictures of you and the rich guy with Kain in the background?" He put his coffee down "If my family is going to be in the middle of some sort of vendetta don't you think we have a right to know, don't you think you owe us that" my eyes snapped open and I looked at him

"Yes" I murmured, Blake looked shocked I'd answered with a yes. I put the cup down the coffee and whiskey churning in my stomach shafts of bright sunlight streamed in through the sky lights illuminating spots in the room including the bed. "Kain is what I told you he was" I sighed "Only he's now classed as rogue by his bossesâ ! he was sent in to get rid of James Weber, he'd done a lot of things to piss of people in high places with some of the deals he was making" I got up and paced the floor, James Weber is a total control freak keeping people under his control and getting what he wants is what he does and he'd got some high profile people by the balls. Kain had to work into the inner circle to learn as much as possible, I stood under the skylight over the living room area and lifted my face to the heat through the glass. "Eighteen months ago Kain walked into my life" I took a deep breath "He was supposed to kill James and he was also supposed to kill me" I looked at Blake his face devoid of any color his eyes wide "I don't know what will happen but as soon as we can Kain and I will be gone and you and your family can try to get back to having a normal life"

"NO" Blake moved off the couch and came over to me "Stay here" he held my arms "you can hide here" he scowled "I still don't understand why you and heâ !"

Falling into Place

"I can't do this right now, I've told you more Blake" I groaned my entire body hurt. I'd been awake for over twenty four hours now "the rest is just filler"

"You need to get into bed" I wasn't up for arguing with him he wrapped his arm round me and walked me back over to the bed and sat me down he bent down and pulled off my sneakers and put my legs up on the bed before he stood up. "Come on scoot back" I moved on the bed lying back and sinking into the pillows Blake reached to the side of the bed and picked up a remote control and hit a button in it a shade whirred and clicked into place over the skylight above the bed. "Do you want me to stay with you?" he sat on the edge of the bed his hand reached out and tucked hair back behind my ear. I sat up and wrapped my arms round him his tone had been filled with concern and worry

"You should get to work" I pulled back from him and lay back down. He stood up and pulled his cell phone from his pocket and put it on the nightstand and climbed over me on to the bed.

"They'll call me if they need me" He propped himself up on his arm his hand supporting his head as he looked at me "You look like you have the weight of the world on your shoulders"

"A lot of pain can do that to you" I shrugged as I looked at the ceiling "when you lose everything it's hard all I have is Kain right now" I turned my head and looked at him "and that's slipping away" Blake frowned at me "I was a normal girl once with friends and a family" I looked back at the ceiling "Things change in the blink of an eye and before you know it you can't go back" Blake reached up a hand and wiped away a tear that had fallen

"But you can move forward, you can try to put things behind you" He stroked his fingers down my cheek "Give people a chance" he moved quickly and slipped an arm round me and rolled onto his back pulling me with him so I was lay with my head on his chest. His arms holding me, I had an overwhelming feeling of security as I lay there the steady rhythm of Blake's heart making my eyes slowly close his hand making slow movements up and down my arm. Sleep consumed me leaving me wrapped with memories and Blake's love.

Chapter 45: So good then so bad

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !.. The sound of Nickelback woke me I rubbed my eyes as An arm reached across me to the nightstand and picked up a cell phone, I inhaled deeply suddenly remembering where I was and who I was with.

"Yep" I rolled on my back ad looked at Blake as he draped one arm over his eyes and spoke on his phone "No it should be fine re dress it and I'll come down in a short whileâ ! oh and saddle up my horse and scout as wellâ ! Day off Chase none of your business" he hung up the phone as I sat up and swung my legs from the bed "feel better? He tossed the phone on the comforter we'd been lay on top of

"Feel like a Mack truck hit me, backed up and did it over" I groaned I felt the bed move Blakes hands were on my shoulders rubbing them "Oh damn you're good" I moaned as he increased the pressure with his thumbs the knots in my muscles relaxing

"So I've been told" he murmured

"Sally?" I spat her name out

"Oh that was a little bitchy wasn't it" he chuckled as he pressed his thumbs either side of my spine making my back arch and a deep moan come from me "You know I do this so much better without a shirt in the wayâ !" he pushed my hair over one of my shoulders sending a tingle up the length of my spine.

"Blake Iâ !" The sound of Nickelback filled the room again I looked round at him and raised an eyebrow as he muttered something under his breath and grabbed the phone.

"WHAT?" he stopped and looked at me and held out the phone "Kain for you" he got off the bed and walked over to his shirt and pulled it on

Me * hey

Kain *Get any sleep

Me * A few hours

Kain * good, well your sister is here due to winning a competition

I snorted

Kain * no I didn't buy it eitherâ ! so I dug around you were tracked here by my wonderful boss how I have no idea but he st it up that your sister got a weekend at the ranch

Me * Kain I'm scared

Kain * I called his house and freaked the fucker the hell outâ ! I think I've thrown them off I routed my call via Washington state so they do not know we're together and basically you were going to be collateral damage when Weber was taken out you're not really a threat on your ownâ ! so

Me * We can hope

Falling into Place

I chewed my lip

Me * what about James?

Kain * oh his pissed he's beyond pissed your gone and I'm gone as well and has people out looking for you but I covered your ass

Me 8 you're good at that

Kain * hey I offered and we both said no remember

I shot a look at Blake who was sitting on the couch resting his elbows on his knees pretending not to listen in but the nerve twitching in his cheek gave him away.

Me 8 Did you remember to tak the pills

Kain * Yes Mom, Jessi came down and reminded me as well amongst other things

Blake at that got up and walked to the door he looked at me

"I'll wait downstairs for you" he slammed the door on the way out"

Kain * he really can't stand me can he?

Me * Nope, look I'm coming to the house we canât

Kain * Meg just breath sweetheart okay there is nothing more we can do right now

Me * butât

Kain * go keep your cowboy happy while Iât well I'm going to have a riding lesson

Me * WOW you kiss your mother with that mouth

Kain * Shut up and go

He hung up I held Blakes phone in my hand and smiled remembering the ring tone, somehow he didn't seem a Nickelback kinda guy. I walked down the stairs Blake was leaning on the rail outside

"Why does he bother you?" I ask making him jump and look round I held out his phone he took the phone and pocketed it

"Let's go I need to go check on a horse" he stepped off the porch and waited for me

"Shutting me down I put my hands on my hips"

"No waiting for you to come with me I'm taking you riding"

"Like hell you are, I'm sorry but if you can't handle Kain being such a huge part of my life then we have a problem" I stepped down and walked by him

Falling into Place

"son of a bitch" he groaned running to catch up with me "stop" he grabbed my arm and pun me to face him "I can have issue with any man bedding my little sister especially after that last god damn fucker that screed her over knocked her up and walked away" he snapped.

"Kain's careful he's not going to get her pregnant and don't you think you're overreacting she's a damn grown woman you can't tell her who she can and can't sleep with" I laughed at him "No man has that" I railed off and dropped my head.

"what?" Blake shook me a little

"Look give him a chance he's had a fucked up life and hell of a career and he's a sweet guy deadly but sweet" I put my hand on Blakes arm "You can't baby Jessi and believe me Kain will wipe the floor with your cowboy ass if you try to get in his way"

"You're in love with him?" Blake cocked his head I groaned and rolled my eyes "How many times he been in your bed?" his tone was angry I raised both eye brows at him.

"In the past three months eleven times in his bed twice in a car and once in a bathroom before I went to a charity gala" I pushed Blake back "and last night he got in the shower with me but we stopped because he likes your sister" I was so mad with him right now I had to get away from him before I landed a right hook on him "How many times you had your dick in sally in the last three months. You want to turn this into a pissing contest then bring it on" Blakes eyes flashed with anger

"You need a damn good spanking" He growled

"You want to do it Cowboy, You don't have the balls" I walked away from him every muscle re tensed in my body this man knew how to push my buttons in both the right and wrong ways

Chapter 46: spanked

I was livid, yes I was in the wrong because of my life but it didn't give ANYONE the god given right to Whoa snapped from my train of rage as I was snagged from behind and spun round the word seemed to flip as was hoisted over Blakes shoulder

"What the hell do you think you're doing?" I screamed at him my fists balling and landing blows in his kidneys. I caught my breath as a hard sharp slap was delivered to my ass

"Taking you in hand like the wildcat that you are" He growled I felt the vibration of his voice through his shoulder

"Put me the hell down or I'll ." He stopped walking and sat on a stump across from the old ranch house flipping me like I weighed nothing forward and pulling me sharply across his knees. One hand planted firmly between my shoulders holding me in place "BLAKE" I screeched as his hand came down flat and square on my ass

"You need to be taught a lesson" I squirmed on his lap "I've never met a damn..." his hand made contact for a third time, making me yelp "hard headed" The hand came down again "feisty"

"DAMN IT" I moaned as his hand came down for a fifth time.

"You are a god damn !" he moved to stand up righting me on my feet, he was wise to me because he gripped my hands "Infuriating, beautiful, sex, stunning woman and I'm going to kiss you right now" his mouth claimed mine the heat from my recently spanked ass spread between my legs in an instant, I felt myself moan into the kiss as I leant into him. His hand fisted I my hair he pressed his hips against me, I felt his excitant harden.

"BLAKE" Joanne's voice sprang us both apart Blakes eyes were blazing as he looked at me "BLAKE there you are" she came over and eyed how close Blake and I were standing "Chase called the house there is a problem in the top paddock looks like one of the horses freaked over something and is looking lame" She tipped her head "Did you get some sleep?"

"Yes Ma'am" I nodded taking a step back from Blake

"You look a little flushed" you think you're wonderful son spanked me and then kissed me I groaned inwardly.

"I'll go check out the horse" He moved so his lower half was facing away from his mother he didn't take his eyes from me. "I'm still going to take you riding" he murmured

"We'll see cowboy" I huffed

"I see the wildcat is coming back, I might have to take you over my knee again"

"I'll be waiting for you to try it" I gasped as his fingers trailed my arm

"Blake the horse"

Falling into Place

"Momma I'm going" he strode away leaving a slightly uncomfortable silence and a scrutinizing stare from Joanne

"Remember the rule Megan, him helping you out is one thing seducing my son I something else and with the man who put a ring on your finger and Kainâ?" she pursed her lips into thin lines "He doesn't need another Sally"

"I'm notâ" what the hell I wanted him and he gets me hot just by looking at me "With all due respect you know a tiny part of the story to do with James and Kainâ and it's your son that needs his sexual appetite slapped down" I shuddered a little at the thought of the slaps he'd dealt me "Excuse me I have to sort a few things out" I turned away from her and walked toward the creek, I knew Jessi was in the house with Kain so I wasn't about to go in and interrupt them.

I sat on the bank with my feet in the water, my head was spinning and my ass was tender, I felt myself bite my lower lip at how turned on I'd become with Mr. take charge cowboy doing what he'd just doneâ my weakness for men like him had been my undoing since meeting James Weber I braced my elbows on my knees and watched the water move slowly and lazily in the Texan heat. I don't know what I'd do if James came after me, i did know I'd either be beaten to death or things would go back to how they had been before. I got lost in my thoughts as the sun tracked overhead here it felt like I was a normal girl or I could pretend I was.

"Hey Penny for them" Kain sat next to me his hair ruffled and his face glowing

"Have fun?" I smirked at him

"I was asking you if you were alright after Misty turning up andâ"

"The fact she's here isâ" I got up and waded into the water to my knees "am I such a bad person" I turned and looked at him "Then Blake gets all huffy because you called his cell phone of all this and literally bragged about getting Jessi naked and under youâ and while we're at it you'll burst the stitches I put in there if you keep doing what you do s well" I chuckledâ oh and I also got spanked thanks to you?" Kain held his side and raised his eyebrows

"Hey you have a smackable ass" he shrugged "you mad with me because of Jessi?"

"what?"

"Well I mean it's beenâ well"

'Kain I'm good with it, hell you deserve someone with a different kind of baggage from a controlling ex that you were sent to kill" I walked back over to him and squished his face between my hands "Have some fun hell fall on love if you want, It's got nothing to do with me I just need my friend every now and then" I sighed he took my hands from his face and kissed the backs of both of them.

"We got way too much history for me to stop being there for youâ admittedly we might now be sleeping with each other anymore butâ I'll always be there I have your back Meg" I smiled at him and hugged him tight

"Thank youâ" there was scream that made Kain and I look round

"That didn't sound good" Kain frowned I shook my head.

Falling into Place

"Sounded like My sister let's hope her damn ass got bite by a rattlesnake" I stepped out of the water, there was a bunch of shouting "I'm going to go see what's happening" I started toward the ranch

'Wait I'll come with you" Kain got up

"Okay you take your time I'm not patching your ass up again" I set of running as another yell split the airâ lâ lâ !..

Chapter 47: Nurse Megan

I rounded the end of the barn and the sight that confronted me was like a blood bath. My sister and her friends were all sobbing and holding each other. Joanne was trying to remain calm but was shaking like a leaf while Jessi was crying while on the phone several hands were crouched on the floor over a screaming ranch hand I knew had been there for a long time but had no clue on his name.

"What happened?" I walked over to Joanne

"Theyâ it happenedâ. It went fastâ!" Joanne stammered I shook my head and turned to look at what was happening, there were two bodies on the floor on rolling on his side. My breath seemed to get knocked out of me as I recognized the boots and the ass as he turned.

"The Paramedics are on the way" Jessi sobbed "Oh Jared doesn't look good"

I strode over training and instinct taking over pushing to the back of my mind that Blake was shakily getting to his feet with the aid of Reid. I dropped to my knees at Jared's side there was a bone coming through his calf and his face was black and blue and his breathing was labored. I assessed him quickly and pulled my hair up and out of the way

"Get me two of the wooden plank from inside of the barn" I Called out as I stripped off the shirt I was wearing and tore it into strips Chase eased back his eyes wide "I'm going to need a knife or something" I glanced up and saw everyone including Blake open mouthed "Don't piss around staring get me the things I need so we can try to stabilize his leg so he doesn't lose it"

"Do as she says" Kain's voice called out

"What's she doing?" Reid shook his head

"One of the things she does best" Kain spat "Now get the things" Blake came over and dropped to his knees with a low groan. I glanced at him and held out my hand

"I need your knife so I can work" he frowned at me "thing of it like a horse with a broken leg and help me splint it" I took the knife he offered I felt his eyes on me, but right now it was about the years of training and the time spent as chief ER nurse in a major Midwest hospital. I cut open Jared's jeans as Chase brought me two planks, Blake's vet training helped as he braced Jared's leg allowing me to immobilize it. I tightened the strips of fabric so it couldn't move I as ripped open Jared's shirt and pressed my ear to his chest listening to each side of it I frowned and shook my head.

"I have a stethoscope" Blake muttered I glanced at him and nodded he called out to Jessi who sprinted into the barn

"What the hell happened here?" I asked

"He got Trampled and kicked by a couple of spooked horses" Blake explained as Jessi raced over with a black bag and handed it to him "How are youâ!" I held out my hand for the stethoscope he handed it to me I put it in and pressed the end against each side of Jared's chest

"He's got one collapsed lung and the other doesn't sound good" I sat back on my heels "You got a scalpel and some tubing"

Falling into Place

"What the hell for?" I thrust his stethoscope in his hands.

"Tell me his lung isn't sloshing and filling with blood! we need to get a drain in to it before he drowns" Blake leant over him and listened for a few seconds before nodding "You want to put in the chest tube or do you want me to do it"

"What the hell are you talking about?" Joanne al but shrieked as Blake held out a scalpel to me and I closed my eyes and took a few deep breaths. "Blake what's sheâ!"

"She's one hell of a ER/trauma nurse" Kain gripped Joanne shoulders "She's got this let her do it" Joanne gapped at him a the sounds of sirens grew loud

"You got this?" Blake murmured I opened my eyes and nodded before I drew the scalpel through the skin and made the opening through to his lung and pressed my finger into it as Jared screamed and blacked out, I took the clear tubing Blake offered to me and pushed it in blood flowed through the tube and Jared took a deeper breath than he had I exhaled the breath I realized I'd been holding in all the time I'd been cutting into Jared.

"Ma'am you need toâ! what the hell" My head snapped round and I looked at the EMT Sean was standing behind him looking shocked.

"Young male trampled by a horseâ!" I recited "Compound fracture of the tibia, its semi stable for now" I pointed to the splinted leg. Pulse strongâ! Right lung is punctured left lung needed a chest tube in he's able to be movedâ! looking at his face I'd make sure that he gets a CAT scan for cranial bleeding, Start and I.V. andâ!"

"I think we got it from here" the one EMT beamed at me "Damn handy work Ma'am" he and his partner took over as I got up from my knees I walked over to the outside faucet and cranked it opened and washed the blood from my hands silence behind me was deafening I heard a groan and looked over my shoulder and I looked at Blake lay back down. I shook my hands dry as Joanne hurried to her sons side along with Sean.

"Blake what's wrong?" She panicked

"Just dizzy momma that horse got a kick in to me as well" he smiled at her but the smile didn't reach his eyes I picked up the stethoscope and pulled open his shirt "see I knew you wanted to get me naked" he chuckled I raised an eye brow at him

"Shut up and let me listen" I snapped as I moved it over his chestâ!â!â!â!â!.

Chapter 48: Shocked a few people

â lâ lâ lâ !.. I draped the stethoscope round my neck and pressed across Blake's hard stomach.

"You need to tell me if it hurts" I looked at him as Sean and Joanne were crouched down my his head "You're Chest is clear and you don't seem to have abdominal injuries" I pushed over his hips "You could give me a hint where you're hurting you know" I moved my hands down his right thigh he flinched and hissed through his teeth "Okay hi taking and looked back at him and smiled. I went down his other leg he didn't move. "Okay I'm going to check your neck that okay?" I go up and moved to the top of his head

"I knew I'd get you to touch me again" he chuckled and then groaned

"Yeah well this way I get to make sure your fit so I can kick your ass for what you did before" I put my knees either side of his head and touched his neck and shoulder before moving to his head "you've got one hell of a bump here?" I ran my fingers back over it

"Ow damn it" he moaned

"You're fine nothing broken nothing more than some bruising and you're probably going to have one hell of a headache" I couldn't help but touch his cheek, I'd like to take a look at the leg to see how deep the bruise is"

"See now you're trying to get my clothes off"

"Blake" Joanne gasped

"Momma I'm fine" he tore his eyes from me and looked at her Reid offered me his hand and pulled me to my feet

"Thank you" Joanne looked at me "I didn'tâ ; you're a nurse?" I nodded and dusted the dirty from my shorts.

"She's a damn good Nurse" Kain snapped "now give her a damn break" I looked at him his arm was round Jessi and he was glaring at Sean.

"Kain" I warned and shook my head He took a deep breath. "I'm going to go change and shower if you'll excuse me" I turned away from them as Reid and Sean eased Blake to his feet.

"Meg" Jessi took a step away from Kain

"Not now" I smiled weakly at her "I have to go get ready for work" Kain rubbed both of her arms and kissed the top of her head as I walked away from them all.

I didn't look back and I didn't allow myself to think until I heard the door click closed behind me in the house I took a deep rattling breath and looked down at my hands, they were shaking like I was wired to the electric grid, more of my past was coming back and Gibbs slapping me hard. I walked across the floor to the bathroom and pushed open the door and tuned on the shower I stripped off the vest top and bra and then my shorts and underwear and stepped into the water. I'd loved my job; I used to relish the pressure and the adrenalin rush I got from the Trauma rooms in the Emergency room before I'd gone and met James Weber and my entire life had been tossed in the air and used for target practice. I moved about the room getting dressed for a shift at the bar my hands were shaking as I tried to put on my makeup.

Falling into Place

"Pull it together girl you did what you trained to do" I snapped at my reflection "Get your head into gear and get ready for work"

"Talking to yourself?" I jumped and looked round at Sean who was stood in the doorway to the house "I did knock butâ€" "

"Is there a problem with Jared?" I frowned "or Blake" he shook his head I looked back in the mirror my hands suddenly becoming steady with the need to look in control.

"I came to talk to you"

"well I hope yahoo don't mind talking while I get ready I have to be in town and working in forty minutes" I coated my lashes with Mascara

"Can I come in?" I just nodded and he closed the door. "What you did for Jared today was well astounding" I didn't look at him and carried on "why didn't you get a job at one of the hospitals round here?"

"Because I'm easy to find that way" I opened my lipstick and rubbed it over my lips "And I'm not looking to be found"

"Is this to do with the rich guy" I closed my make up case and put it in the vanity drawer "and the reason we can't seem to find Kain"

"something like that" I looked directly at him "do you realize you're nosiness could have put my life and Kain's life in danger" My hands found my hips "I like your family I really do but my business is my business my past is a fucked up mess that no one should have to deal with, but the people that would come after both Kain and myself are people that you don't mess with people that are above the law and not worry about people in the way it's collateral damage to them" He frowned at me "Sean I'm not saying this to sound scary or big and tough I'm telling you the truth, I was one hell of a nurse and one man made me give it up in the blink of an eye Kain was the man that saved my ass after 3 years of doing and being something I hated" I picked up my cell phone and my keys dropping the phone into my purse "Please Kain and I aren't a threat to anyone, we're not a couple, yes we have history but that is our business not yours and he really likes Jessi"

"What about Blake?" I stalled walking to the door

"What about him?" I put my hand on the door handle but didn't look round

"I saw the way you looked at him this afternoonâ€" ; we all saw the way you looked at him"

"I don't know what you mean" I shrugged "I was assessing him for injuries"

"Okay then why does my brother look like a love sick puppy when you're name gets mentioned, why does he get mad when you're near another guy?"

"I don't know that's something you need to talk to him about not me" I walked out of the house and over to the car. Why the hell couldn't people mind their own damn businessâ€" !â€" !â€" !â€" !

Falling into Place

Me * you pulled on my nurse strings

Blake * that sounds kinky

Me * trust you and how can you say that after you spanked me this morning?

Blake * that was a punishment but if itâs

Me * I'm about to get in my car I'm losing you

I hung up feeling hot all over as I got in the car I squeezed my things together, as I felt the slight sting from my butt cheeks. 'Stop even thinking of that' I chastised myself 'you have to be strong' I snorted at that one as I looked down at the Speedo, I was touching eighty damn I wanted to get back to the ranch for some reason. I jumped as my phone started to ring

Me * hey

Kain * how you doing?

Me * I'm fine

Kain * this is me remember I know you

Me * I was shaken up a little but I promise I'm okay

Kain * you sound like you're in the car

Me * the bar was quiet o J.D. let me off early

Kain * oh soâs you're on your way home

Me * yes why?... in fact don't answer that I'm going to stop off and make sure there isn't more tissue damage than I first thought on Blakes leg so you and Jessi have time

Kain * I'm not

Me * oh you so are and have done

Kain * I'm offended

Me * Kain you get this tone in your voice after you've had sex and right now you've got the tone and I can here Jessi singing in the background so she's either in the shower or she's making dinner for the two of youâs Don't worry I won't cramp your style and I'll head back into town later and stay at Miss. Hesta place

Kain * I'm not really being fair am I?

Me *Night Kain

Kain * Meg

Falling into Place

I hung up the phone and turned it off dropping it into my purse as I turned into the drive at the ranch I saw the torches lit round the porch as I drove by not looking over at who was there. I pulled up outside of the bunk house and turned off the engine plunging it back into darkness apart from a light inside where I now know there to be huge living room and kitchen.

"Evening Meg" Chase stepped out and held the door open for me "Blake said you were calling on him" I nodded "Thank you for doing what you did for Jared"

"You're welcome, I was happy to help" I smiled warmly at him as he closed the door after me no one else was in the room I headed for the stairs up to where Blake's apartment was my heart was thundering in my chest as I reached out to knock on the door

Chapter 50: Damn Cowboy

â lâ lâ lâ !.. â lâ lâ lâ !.. I heard a moan and a shuffle from inside the room and then the handle turned. Blake pulled the door open and a smile spread across his face as he looked at me.

"I wasn't sure you'd come" he stepped back and held the door while I walked inside "damn you look good tonight makes me wish I'd been in the bar" I put my purse down on the table behind the couch

"Well you did point out I'd said I wanted to look at the bruise" He limped back over I tipped my head

"Feels like the worst dead leg I've ever had" he smiled and went and sat on the edge of his bed

"Let me take a look at it" He nodded and got back to his feet and pulled on his belt I felt my face flush as I watched hi taking in each of his abs down to his happy trail, my mouth went dry as soon as he pushed his jeans down until I caught a look at his right thigh. I came over to the bed. "Sit down for me" I put my hands on his chest and felt the muscles twitch under my fingers as he eased back down keeping his eyes fixed on mine. I walked back over to the sink and washed my hands before returning to him, his hands clasped behind his head.

"You can see the outline ofâ "

'Oh I know I can seeâ ! My eyes glanced where they shouldn't "erâ ! the horse shoe" I focused my eyes onto the bruise what was almost jet black and red I ran my hand over it "You're lucky you didn't break your thigh bone"

"Lucky I have you here" he reached up and tucked a piece of hair behind my ear "and what you didâ ! I mean the chest tube damn that was some work"

"Not my first" I shrugged

"You want to talk to me about it"

'Not really"

"Okay, well how do you think it looks you splinted and performed a chest incision with all the skill of any vet or doctor I've ever seenâ ! well I'd go to the doctors hell of a lot more if my Doctor was as hot as you" he smiled

"I'm a nurseâ ! I was head of the Trauma and Emergency room in one of the hospitals back home" my hand was resting on the inside of his thigh my fingers absently stroking the hard flesh of his leg. "I was young and driven and one hell of a nurse I saw no one was taking charge so I guess instinct took over"

"You saved his leg"

"It's what I do... did" I corrected

"Oh you do a lot more than that" he sat up

"How's the bump on the head?"

Falling into Place

"How's the ass?" I flushed at him

"I still owe you an ass kicking for that" I laughed and got off the bed

"Where are you going?" he chuckled

"Well I came and I checked you over and now I need to go" his face fell

"Are you kidding me" he moved off the bed "You came here you get me all but nakedâ"

"You weren't wearing a shirt when I got here so technically I didn't do anything other than my nursing commitments"

"Oh is that what you call it" he tipped his head "Stroking a guy's leg, licking that pretty mouth when you do it" he cocked his head

"I didn't whyâ why would youâ even think" Oh I was groaning inwardly, I'd seen what my leg stroking had done to him and I'd wanted to get on him there and then.

"Do I need to spank you again?" He looked at me through his lashes

"Yesâ" whoa where did that come from "No I mean I shouldâ Oh hell" I'd backed against the table behind the couch and Blake was in front of me a wicked grin on his lips

"I think I'll wait till you piss me off again to do that" he murmured his eyes falling to my lips "Right now I want you like I've never wanted anyone before"

"Blake it's not a goodâ oh god" I shuddered as he trailed his finger over my bare shoulder his touch sent electrical shivers coursing through me

"I remember leaving you pissed and half fucked" he lowered his head and nipped at my neck "I need to rectify it"

"Really" I tried to sound nonchalant and failed with a huge F

"Yes really" He literally growled as he nipped harder making my breath catch in my throat "I'm going to have you naked under me" I felt his hand slide up the back of my neck and fist in my hair "You've driven me insane girl" he nuzzled my ear before running his tongue round the edge of it, almost making me come undone there and then

"I could stop you" I moaned as his hands pushed up the bottom of my shirt and pulled it off over my head and tossed it across the floor his eyes skimmed down and his tongue licked his lower lip

"You want to stop me" he chuckled "Your bodies telling me something else" His fingers trailed and rolling it between them down my throat flicking the closure of the strapless bra, his right hand caught my nipple in between his thumb and finger and tugged

"Damn" My head fell back as heat seared through me the constant tweaking mirrored the suckling his mouth was now doing on the other side. Damn this cowboy was something elseâ lâ lâ !..

Chapter 51: HEATED

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !.. â lâ lâ lâ !.. The sound of 'Something in your mouth' filled the air as I held on to the console table with Blakes hands at the button of my jeans. Both of us gasping for breath and air He looked at me

"Ignore it" He mused as he hooked his thumbs into the belt loops on my jeans and pulled them sharply down my legs "Nice" he breathed tracing his legs painfully slowly over the hot skin of my thigh to the black lace of my panties. The phone started to ring again. He seemed to growl.

"Get the phone and turn it off cowboy" I bit my lower lip ready to toss his cell phone from the skylight

"Fuck the phone" He shook his head "Hope these weren't expensive" he chuckled taking both his hands and tearing the fine black lace into shreds his finger finding it's intended target in a heartbeat as my hand gripped his shoulders as he moved it in and out of me "Damn you're so ready for me" he nuzzled my ear "You want this"

"No I wantâ !" I grabbed the hard rod pushing up over the waistband of his jeans; he arched his back and hissed as I trailed my fingers over the head of him he pushed a second finger into me making my eyes slam closed and me to lose my train of thought.

"You'll get that in time Miss. Miller" his mouth consumed mine as his finger relentless drove into me. The phone rang again I pushed him back catching him off guard he winced as he jarred his bruised leg. I moved off the table, I was pissed don't distract when in the moment. I grabbed the phone that was lay on the bed "What theâ !" I heard Blake behind me as I bent over the footboard of his bed.

Me * Blakes busy

Sally * whatâ ! Who the hell isâ !

I felt a hand slap my ass hard making me yelp and drop the phone it bounced onto one of the pillows

"I don't take kindly to being pushed away when I wasâ ! Playing" he pushed himself into me in on quick thrust that had me all but purring and pushing back against him as he pulled back and pushed hard into me again "Damn you feel so Good" I could tell his teeth were gritted as I swiveled my hips back against him and clenched my inner muscles. Blake's hands gripped my hips as I braced my hands on the mattress "I want you on your back" He pulled out of me and picked me up

"Your Leg!" what a time of my nursing instinct to kick in I inwardly slapped myself

"I have a nurse I'm fine"

He wrapped my legs round his waist and dropped me back on the bed and resumed with the relentless thrusting, filling me as full as possible as my back arched of the bed pushing my breasts toward his hungry mouth. He sucked my nipple into his mouth and nipped a little hard everything in me tensed and fell apart as I came full force harder than I think I'd ever done. I felt a final deep thrust from Blake as he let himself go his head dropping to my chest, his breath coming in hard gasps before he pulled out and rolled to the side. My entire body felt achingly good as my legs flopped down my knees no longer able to keep them bent.

Falling into Place

I turned my head and looked at him Blake had his arm tossed over his eyes the sheen of sweat catching the light from the lamps in the living room.

"Do you just like slapping my ass?" I murmured even my voice was exhausted, I watched the smirk twitch on Blake's lips before he slowly moved his arm and turned his head to look at me his eyes looked darker. And more intense

"Well when you're so infuriating, it needs to be slapped like a petulant child" he rolled on his side and propped his head up on his hand and thumbed his lip with his other hand "And hell it's one hell of a way to get you out of your clothes" He reached over and pushed my hair back

"Oh and FYI those now scraps of black lace were over a hundred dollars" I moved to the edge of the bed and got up.

"erâ ; where are you going? And are you kidding me over a hundred for thoseâ ;"

"Bathroom and yup" I looked back at him and grabbed his t-shirt that was on the back of the couch and pulled it on before walking into the bathroom and closing the door. I braced my hands on the sink and looked in the mirror and had to smile it was antique and looked out of place in the ultra modern bathroom. My cheeks were flushed and my hair was a totalâ ; well bird nest that was going to take some taming.

I ran the water and splashed it on my face. The ache between my legs was testament to how damn good things had just been. I dried my hands and face and walked back out as the door knocked. Blake was still lay on the bed his arms behind his head looking like he'd been carved from marble all be it tanned marble, I wanted him all over again which took me by surprise as the door banged this time.

"It could be my mother" he smirked a little too wide for my liking

"I'll go back in the bathroom then" I cocked my head as he slid off the bed and reached for his jeans and pulled them on, I licked my lips at the sight of him.

"I wouldn't do that with the lips lick Miss. Miller" he chuckled as he sauntered over to the door

"I need to when I want something in my mouth cowboy" I chuckled as I opened the door again to the bathroom watching the spark flash in his eyes as I pushed my finger into my mouth and let it slip out with a POP

"Damn I'm going to spank you all over again" he growled with a laugh as he opened the door and got an instant slap across the face

Chapter 52: Take out the trash

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !.. "You were supposed to come to me tonight, we made the date" Sally screeched as she shot through the door and lunged at "And some slut answers your phone and I hear you fucking her hard when you should have been in my bed"

"What the hell" Blake braced himself against the barrage of slaps and clawing that sally was raining down on him

"I'll bet she isn't anything like me" she yelled I moved across the floor my fist making contact with the side of her head catching her off guard and bouncing her from the wall a few feet away

"Damn right I'm nothing like you, I don't have the reputation of being a slut" I grabbed her hair and pulled her back to her feet.

"Get out Sally" Blake snarled "How many times do I need to tell you, you were nothing but a hole to fuck" I glanced at him as she struggled trying to get my hand unraveled from her hair "I told you yesterday I was done with you, I told you not to call me, text me or even look at me" I let go of her and pushed her from me

"You two bit yanked whore" she turned on me "You took my man"

"Oh wake up and smell the horse shit sweetheart" I shook my head "he was fucking you because it was convenient, I didn't steal him from you, you bored his ass" her hand raised to slap me

"Hell now you don't even think of touching Megan" Blake tackled her round the waist and pinned her to the wall her arms above her head his hips pushing against her stomach

"See you still want me baby" she breathed at him

"No I want you to leave me the hell alone, find a guy to love you because I was using you" he eased away from her "Megan has nothing to do with this at all do I make myself clear"

"She's with that other guy" Sally glared at me "She'll hurt you"

"Jeeshâ ! does everyone think I'm knocking boots with Kain?" I groaned

"Yes" Sally and Blake said at the same time.

"Great" I shook my head

"Why don't you get back into bed" Blake smiled at me I'll make sure Sally gets into her car.

"Why don't you get into bed and I'll kick her as back to town" I put my hands on my hips

"I'd like to see you try" sally hissed at me

"Aw honey really" I slapped Blakes hands away from her and grabbed her hair at the back of her neck making her scream "I don't play nice when challenged"

"Meg" Blake called out

Falling into Place

"Make up your mind do you want her or not because I'm not a hole to fuck, I've been there done that for a long time and I'm not willing to do it again" Blake seemed to blanch a little and was taken a back. He held up his hands "Come on Slutzilla" I pulled he behind me down the stairs there were a bunch of ranch hands all sitting round the table playing poker.

"Meg" Chase frowned at me as a wailing Sally struggled lashing out at me with her claw like nails scratching my arms

"Can one of you get the door I'm putting out the trash" I smiled at them there was scrabbling as all of the guys raced to get up and get to the door I walked out and pushed Sally down the steps "don't push me little girl people have underestimated me for a while but I've taken down big drunks in the ER than youâ you'll do well to remember that" I put my hands on my hips Sally pushed herself back onto her feet

"I'm from this town and I'll ruin you" she screamed at me

'Have at it darlin'" I put on a fake Texan drawl "I've taken worse" I turned on my heel and walked back into the bunk house and closed the door all the guys were looking at me. "Night" I ran back up the stairs and into Blake's apartment. I closed the door and flicked the lock Blake was sitting on the couch a glass of Grey Goose in his hands. "Well trash is out" I walked over to him and took the glass from him as I sat down and knocked it back "One way to throw a bucket of cold water on the night" I put the glass on the table and turned my head to look at him, he was watching me "What?"

"I'm sorry" he sighed and got up and picked up the glass and walked to the shelf where he had liquor bottles lined up and splashed the glass half full of goose and knocked it back

'Sorry for whatâ getting involved with her or with what happened tonight?" I tipped my head "Say if you want me out of here and I'll walk away Blake" I got to my feet "You were warned about me not being a good girl I'm not an innocent" he smiled at that "I won't break if you want to tell me ht happened tonight wa a one off because you needed to get your kicks"

"Go back to Kain?" I rolled my eyes at him

"NOâ Kain isn't an issue he's my best friend on a level I will never expect you to understandâ and he's in the old house right now probably making your sister scream his nameâ" I pulled off his t-shirt He stopped with his glass half way to his mouth his eyes growing dark as I bent and picked up my bra and jeans "I'll go sleep in my car forâ" I glanced at the clock "Oh three hours before I need to get up for work" I pulled on my jeans and was suddenly pinned against the doo Blake pushing my jeans back down my thighs his mouth on mine my hands pinned under one of his over my head. He groaned into the kiss as his fre hand cupped my ass and he picked me up bringing me back to the bed

"You're not going to go anywhere?" He murmured "I want you in my bed, I want you all over me and I'm damn sure I'm going to be inside of you again" he rolled me onto my back and got up and removed his jeans again, I smiled at just how ready he was my legs opening ready to welcome him back. He shook his head I frowned at him. "You won't get on a horse and rideâ you adverse to getting on the cowboy?" he grinned.

"Not at all" I laughed getting up and moving o he could lay down "I hope you're ready to be ridden hard"â lâ lâ lâ

Chapter 53: Morning after the night before

â lâ lâ lâ !.. I felt fingers trailing up and down my spine making me smile.

"What time is it?" I murmured as I rolled over Blake was propped up on his elbow

"just after six" He bent his head and pressed his lips to my ribs pushing the underside of my breast with his nose.

"Damn I should be in the house helping your Mom with breakfast" I scabbled to get out of bed "Shit where's my shirt"

"On the back of the couch" He laughed "But you don't have to go inâ !" He lay back on the pillows I looked at him as I picked up my shirt.

"Well If I get my ass fired for being late and sleeping with you I'm going to have to leave here" I bent and picked up the scraps of black lace from the floor

"I called my Mom and told her that you had a bad night and I got you to stay here" I dropped my torn underwear in the trash can.

"Really" I raised an eye brow

"Yes Ma'am" he rubbed his hand across his rough stubble on his jaw

"So you really want me to get my ass fired" he frowned at me "I'm going to work" I pulled up my jeans

"You're not wearing underwear" He sat up

"And whose fault is that" I shook my head at him "I'm also wearing four inch heels and a shirt that smells of beer" I put the shirt on "I still have your hand prints on my ass, my nipples feel like they'll never recover and I'm pretty sure I'm going to be walking funny" A satisfied grin appeared on Blakes face "and all this I have to carry off with out your Momma finding out what we did"

"My sister is sleeping with Kain so what's the difference"

"HE DOESN'T WORK FOR YOUR MOM" I shouted at him with a giggle as he got out of bed letting the sheet fall away and he stood naked and looking more than ready for a replay of the previous night "And that's distracting" I sighed

"What's distracting?" he grinned innocently

"You waving that around I know it bites" I tried hard to keep looking at his face

"I could convince you to stay by taking those clothes off you again like I did last night" he started to walk across the floor

"You need to rest that leg" I dodged out of his way and picked up my purse "and Cowboy I think you need to take a cold shower that swelling you keep getting looks like it could get out of hand" I flicked the lock back on the door and opened it.

Falling into Place

"Hey" I looked round "You leave without a kissing me" he grabbed me and pulled me to him his mouth claiming mine his tongue easing into my mouth. He pulled back a little "Will my nurse come back later and check on the swelling?"

"I think I'll try to get some sleep I'm running on empty right now" his hands were encircling my waist I put my hands on his upper arms feeling the hard tight muscle under my fingers

"You can sleep here" his face became serious "You do look tired"

"Emotionally drained" I nodded he held my face in his hand and tipped my head down and kissed my forehead "How about if I promise to keep my hands off your body"

"Can you do that?" I trailed my fingers down over his chest

"You want the truthful answer or the one I should be giving you" I started to laugh

"I need to get to work" I pressed my lips to his "thank you" I pulled back from him

"For what?"

"last nightâ this morningâ giving me a night where I didn't have to think" I touched the side of his face

"Can we talk some more maybe?" he tipped his head

"Not much more to say" I chewed the inside of my cheek

"How about dinner?"

"With the whole of Wimberley sticking their noses in?"

"I know a few real nice places in San Antonioâ let me make a few calls" the thought of dinner away from here was so appealing.

"Are we talking a cheap steak dinner or something a little more?"

"I was thinking more" He pushed his thumbs into the belt loops of my jeans "and in you're going to need to be wearing a dress"

"I can do thatâ !" I felt warm and comfortable with Blake "Now I have to go" I pecked him on the lips again and pulled out of his hold I started down the stairs.

"Miss Miller" I looked round at him "Thank you for last night" I felt color flush my cheeks and I carried on down the stairs and out of the house, I walked over to my car and unlocked it fetching out a pair of lip flops I had in there and headed for the house. I pushed the kitchen door open to the sound of Joanne humming as she worked

'Sorry I'm late Iâ !'

'Blake told me" she didn't look round "And I should be firing your little ass right now for breaking my rules" I stopped with my mouth hanging open

Falling into Place

"Excuse me" I swallowed

"I had a visitor here just after three this morning and she was telling me about you and Blake and they fact you were in his bed" She turned and faced me "You were told not to and yet you still went to him"

"Whoa a minuteâ I went to make sure he was okay and his leg was getting better it's easy to get blood clots from deep bruising like thatâ and call it what you want bu he was the one doing the seducing and yes I'm throwing his ass under the bus because you're son isn't sweetness and light you want to see the hand prints from where he spanked me" Joanne's turn to be open mouthed "Now do you want me to make a start on the eggs or the Bacon"â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ ;

Chapter 54: Exhaustion is a killer

â la la la !.. The rest of breakfast was a little strained to say the least especially when Jessi walked in grinning like the cat that had gotten the cream making Joanne rant something about needing to go sort a few things out and left leaving Jessi and I to finish off.

"Sorry Meg" I looked round at Jessi and frowned "For sort of taking over in the old ranch house"

"It's okay and Kainâ ; well he's better on bed rest" I giggled making her blush "You like him?" she nodded "Good" I went back to putting the fruit out

"Meg?"

"Hmmm" I stopped and walked to the coffee pot

"You and Kainâ ; I meanâ ; wellâ ; he won't talk about you and him"

"There's not much to talk about" I poured a cup of me and for her

"I know you were more than friends" I nodded "can I ask why you and heâ ; well"

"Because it's not right for us" I shrugged "What Kain and I are to each other isâ ; well complicated, yes I won't lie to you we spent a lot of time in bed and I'm not saying this to annoy you" I put my cup down and walked over to her "But at the time he saved my life by being my go to guy" I felt tears well up in my eyes "You know something of what he is" She nodded slightly "He was supposed to get rid of me as in he had been sent to kill meâ !" her face went the color of flour "well collateral damage is what I'm called, but he didn't, he couldn't because he saw how bad things were for me" I took a deep breath "The grass is never ever greener on the other side and I found that out the hard way and I couldn't find a way to go back, and he helped me I love him with all my heart for freeing me but we're not supposed to be a long haul coupleâ ; please don't even think of me as wanting him, and he doesn't want me other than we need each other as best friends" Jessi shot across the kitchen and threw her arms round me and hugged me hard, tears rolling down her cheeks I hugged her back.

"I can't get my head around what your life's been" she sniffed pulling back

"What it's been is history" I sighed "All I can do is move forward and Kain needs to find the girl that will love him for the amazing man he is" her cheeks flushed beet red

"You think it's crazy if I think I've already fallen in love with him" She looked at the floor "and I've only known him for a few days" She glanced up at me

"I don't think it's crazy at all hell I fell in love or so I thought it was love in the space of a cup of coffee" I wrapped my arms round myself as I thought of the first meeting with James in the diner. "You can't help who you love and if it feels right you have to try it" I picked up the fruit plate and walked to the door with it "I don't know how much longer I'm going to be working here" she wiped her eyes on her hands "I think you're Mom is ready to run me out of town because of your Brother" I grinned at her

"He likes you" She took her coffee as she turned on the dishwasher "Blake I mean, I've never seen him so infuriated but so enamored with anyone in his entire life" I pushed open the door trying not to glow from the outside, if I had to admit it I liked him as well but I had so many issues and skeletons in my closet I wasn't

Falling into Place

sure if he or I actually could do this. I put the plate on the buffet table. Joanne was standing talking to Reid and to a guy I'd not seen before but he looked so much like his son next to him it was obvious who he was. I heard the door open behind me and Jessi came out. "DADDY" She squealed running by me and landing herself in his waiting arms. Joanne looked at me her face unreadable. I covere the fruit and made busy checking everything was ready.

"You must be Megan" I looked round at the man with one arm round his daughter and his other hand tightly gripping on to his wife "I've heard hell of a lot about you" his smile was as wide as Blakes "I'm Robert Walker"

"Nice to meet you" I held my hand out to him Joanne was eyeing me

"Sorry I wasn't around to welcome you here" I could tell he was trying to weigh up if everything he'd been told about me was true.

"You should have seen Megan yesterday when Jared was trampled" Jessi gushed.

"I heard Blake called me and filled me in"

"Well I couldn't stand back and not help" I shrugged feeling my cheeks glow a little

"Well thank youâ So you and my boy hooking up?" Where the hell did that come from. A smirk played on Joanne's lips.

"I don't hit on married men and I know Reid's married" I cocked my head as Reid hung his hand shook it "And Sean and I don't get along all too well" Robert threw his head back and roared with laughter.

"I like this girl!" he chuckled "Now if you will all excuse me and my wife we need to reconnect"

"Okay I don't think I need breakfast now" Reid groaned

"Now you know where all you boys get it from" Joanne giggled "Megan we'll talk later"

"Yes Ma'am" I nodded they walked into the house, Reid looked at me. "Well I'd better go pack my bags"

"She won't fire you" Reid smiled "Her and Blake just got into it" I raised an eye brow

"well I'd better pack up and leave right away" I ran my hand through my hair

"No way" Jessi scowled "We'll all argue with her you're not going anywhere"

"Oh you still here" I looked round over my shoulder as my sister walked over with her little group of friends

"Jess you okay if I go check on Kain's dressing?" I aske without looking at her keeping my eyes fixed on my sister "bacuase I don't think my temper will hold if I stay here"

"Sure I got this Can you take him some food"

"I was going to and I'll run some to Blake while I'm there"

"Oh Blake headed to the Barn about half an hour ago" Reid added

Falling into Place

"He was told to stay in bed"

"Okay TMI this time in the morning" Reid chuckled

"Because of the bruise" I rolled my eyes "Now he'll get his ass kicked for going against Medical orders"

"So how come you're away from your FiancÃ©?" My sister blocked my path her friends giggling behind her

"Is it any of your businessâ you and the rest of the lame assed family I was born into made it perfectly clear what you thought to my career choice and my choice in menâ once dad called me a damn gold digger I wa done with all of you I'm a Miller in name only" Something round her neck caught my eye stopping me dead in my track. "WHERE DID YOU GET THAT?" I pointed to the pendant at her throat

"You're dresser after you leftâ Grandma's jewelry looks better on my anyway" I felt my blood begin to boil "My Grandmother and I had a closer relationship with each other than I'd had with anyoneâ the day I graduated nursing school she was the only member of my family that was there and she'd died a few days later in a car accident and the pendant was something I'd loved of hers since I was a little girl and she'd always promised me that one day it would be mine.

"Okay I think we'll go this way" I felt Reid's arms wrap round me and he lifted me up and walked with me toward the barn "No fighting Meg" He sighed as I silently felt tears roll down my cheeksâ lâ lâ !.

Chapter 55: Boys will be boys

â lâ lâ lâ !. "I'm fine let go please" I managed to croak out as we got by the barn

"You sure?" Reid said as he set my feet down I just nodded. I let go of me I put my hand on the door to the barn "Megâ !"

"Not now okay can you just make sure they don't give Jessi a hard time because they are the stereotypical mean girls" Reid nodded and started to walk away I push open the barn door Chase and Blake were standing by one of the stalls, they both look round as the door creaks behind me. Blake read my face in an instant and handed his bag to chase.

"Can you go put this back in the bunk house and check on her in a couple of hours" He patted the blond horse that was nuzzling his pockets. Chase nodded and walked through the other door in to the barn Blake came over to me. I wrapped my arms round him as soon as he was close enough, I needed to feel safe with him right now "Hey" he murmured stroking my hair "What's going on?"

"You not listening to me" I sniffed not looking at him

"And that got you crying? He chuckled , his hand found its way under my hair and he massaged the back of my neck.

"I'm tired and worried about you and Kain doing way more than you're advised to" I inhaled him, he'd showered since I'd left him and he smelled warm spicy.

"I had a sick horse to look after" his lips pressed against my head "I was going to go to the house and grab some breakfast and rest up, I promise" His voice was low and filled with worry "I know my Momma said something to you, she came and had words with me while I was showering" I looked at him "Yes I Freaked the hell out as well" he chuckled "But she knows how I feel and she knows her rule is bullshit"

"You Mom wasn't the one that upset me" I ran my hand through my hair "I had a run in with my sisterâ ! and" I sat down on an up turned bucket "I need to go change Kain's dressing" I chewed my lip and made to get up grabbing the door of the stall as I went light headed.

"Kain can wait you're going to get some rest" Blake put his arm round me.

"No it needs changing to keep it clean and I need to shower and change"

"Okay I'm coming with you to the old house and then I'm taking you to my place and you an shower and sleep there" I opened my mouth to say something "protest and exhausted or not I'll spank you and not in the fun way" he kissed me on the temple.

"You're confusing" I shook my head

"How?" he walked with me across the grass

"Because you're a different guy when you're being nice" I stepped onto the porch f the house "Instead of the egotistical arrogant son of a bitch I've argued with"

Chapter 56: restless dreams

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !. My Body wanted to rest it started not to want to do what it was instructed as Blake wrapped me in a towel before going back and wrapping one round his waist.

"Lets get you dry and into bed" He smiled at me

"I could have showered myself you know"

"You'd have sat on the floor of the shower and gone to sleep, and I like getting you wet in more ways than one" He took another towel and rubbed my hair.

If I wasn't so tired I'd have some sort of comeback for you" he walked me over to the bed and sat me down

"Honey if you weren't so tired I'd be taking you against the wall of the shower" he chuckled "And on the kitchen counter, the couch the floor, and the bed of course" I shook my head

"And what makes you think I would want that?" I pulled the towel off of my body and bent forward to wipe the water from my legs

"Because I can tell" he walked back toward the kitchen and opened the fridge pulling out two bottles of water and came back "You moaned that sexy little moan you do when I stroke you here" he trailed his fingers down my collar bone and between my breasts. I moaned as the tingle ran through me "see just like that" He murmured as his head dropped and his lips caught my nipple. My back arched spontaneously He pulled back and gave me a wicked grin "And your skin is flushed" I opened my eyes and looked at him "you need to get some sleep"

"You do things like that and you expect me to sleep?" I flopped back on the bed "I'm hot and bothered now"

"You and me both" he glanced down his own body

'we can do something about it" I bit my lower lip

"We can As soon as you've had some rest" He tugged of the towel my eyes getting a full frontal view of him making me on instinct lick my lips He crawled on to the bed wincing a little as he moved his bruised leg "And I do believe a certain really hot nurse I know has told me I should be resting my leg as well"

"Hmmm the swelling's back" I tuned to face him and trailed my fingers down his stomach "I know a way to get rid of theâ !" he caught my wrist and pinned my arm over my head

"I will restrain you if I have to I've been roping horse since I was old enough to walk" he pulled me over so my back was to his chest "Now get some rest Miss. Miller we have a dinner date for eight tonight and I'm so looking forward to getting you alone away from here" he kissed me behind my ear.

"We need to talk about a few things" I yawned as I pushed my ass back into him

"First don't proffer what you're not willing to give me" he growled in a gravelly sexy way before he playfully slapped my ass cheek "And talk about what?"

Falling into Place

"Who said I'm not willing and about you, me and Kain" I heard his teeth grind together "Oh and your mother and some of my history"

"You're one hell of a teaser Megan" he pulled me closer to him and reached for a sheet covering the two of us "and I think talk of him will put me off dinner"

"Well its part of my life I refuse to let go of Blake" I closed my eyes

"Hmmm" if he said anything else I didn't hear him because I drifted into a deep restless sleep

James walked out of the dressing room straightening his tie and pulling on the Charcoal grey suit jacket. I sat up in bed.

"I have meetings all day" he looked in the mirror and checked his hair "You'll be ready for dinner at the club at eight, make sure you're make up covers that" he pointed to the black eye that had appeared since the previous night when he'd taken it out on my body the business deal that had gone wrong "Wear the green dress and the emeralds the deal tonight won't go south if you turn on the Megan charm" he smirked at me through the mirror "and I know the guys wife has Bi tendencies so please her please him" I felt sick at the thought of it and looked down

"Can't I just" He moved across the bedroom like a streak of lightening and I was on my back his body over mine

"You can just be a good fiancée and do what you have to for your man" he scowled at me "Do you understand me" I swallowed hard he reached a hand up and pushed aside the covers pushing three fingers deep into me. I gripped his upper arms "I own this and you and you will do what I need you to" James kissed me roughly and pulled his fingers out of me "I have to go to work" he wiped his fingers in the sheets and he grabbed his briefcase and stalked out of the room.

I got up and walked into the bathroom and slowly looked up into the large mirror over my side of the vanity, it was unlike James to hit me where it could be seen I peered at the red and black mark round my eye. I could cover it easily and would have to if we were going for My blood ran cold, James expected me to go to bed with the wife of the guy I forced the sick feeling back, suddenly I felt suffocated the only person I could talk to wasn't here I started the shower and quickly washed my body and dried off.

I pulled on some underwear a far cry from the stuff I used to wear James only allowed me to use French lace and silks, underwear wasn't the right thing to call it this was all lingerie I grabbed a wrap dress from the hanger in the closet and put it on tying it closed with the belt and putting on Knee high black boots, I reached for sun glasses for the wrack of fifteen pairs that I had and put them on pushing pins into my hair as I walked out of the bathroom.

The maids were already busy cleaning the entire down stairs of the sprawling house I went to the key holder in James's office and took the keys for the sleek black BMW M3 that James used when he didn't want anyone with him. I walked through the kitchen.

"Miss Miller breakfast" the housekeeper looked at me

"No Karen I've got errands to run"

"What about you're security?" She eyed me

Falling into Place

"I don't need security to get my nails done" I snapped little hard

'Of course" she looked back at what she was doing I walked out to the garage, my hands shaking as I opened the door to the car and got in reversing out and heading away from the house as quickly as I could. I wasn't sure what I was doing was right but I needed to feel safe even if it was for a little whileâââââ.

Chapter 57

â ãâ ãâ ãâ ã I pulled into the parking garage alongside the old warehouse building and got out M heels clicking on the concrete as snow swirled in the air. I huddled into my coat even though I was heated and nervous inside. I opened the door and checked the names on the mail boxes.

'Ma'am can I help you' I jumped at the sound of the concierge at the desk

"Yes sorry I was looking for my brotherâ ã Kain Price" I stammered try to gain some control girl I screamed at myself

"Oh Mr. Price is on the fifth floor" the overly round and red faced man smiled at me

"Thank you"

"Would you like me to call him and let him know you're here?"

'No that's okay I'll just go up' I walked toward the elevator

"Yes ma'am" the guy sat back down and went back to watching whatever it was on the screen in front of him.

The ride in the elevator was nerve wracking, what the hell was I doing here, I was being an idiot, I shouldn't be here, but here I was and Kain was the only one I felt safe anywhere near right now especially since I'd started to give him details on James's corrupt business dealings. I lifted my sun glasses and pinched the bridge of my nose as the elevator dinged signaling the arrival in the fifth floor, the doors opened and I stepped forward and was face to face with Kain.

"Bruce called to tell me my sister was on her way up" he folded his arms over his chest

"I told him not to" I swallowed hard

"Well I did wonder as I don't have a sister" Kain cocked his head "Why are you here?" I looked down the hall as another door opened and a woman stepped out with two small dogs "Let's go into the apartment" He put his hand in the small of my back and he steered me toward the open door way to apartment 5B he closed the door after us and flicked the locks. I looked round at the polished wooden floors of the renovated warehouse space. Windows filled the opposite walls that gave a river view. The living room had two black leather couches facing each other with a glass coffee table between them and a bottle of Grey Goose and a crystal glass the sole things on there. "Let me take your coat" I looked round at him and smiled weakly and put my purse on the counter top and undid the buttons. Kain stood behind me and slipped the coat from my shoulders and walked over to a closet and hung it up.

"I shouldn't have come" I chewed my lip

"Why Meg" He walked round to the front of me "You haven't said anything since last weekend and what happened with us in front of Weber" he pushed his hands through his hair. I looked down remember the feeling of Kain touching me and being inside of me while James watched "Megan please this is killing me, you shouldn't have goneâ ã" He stopped "Take off the glasses I can't see you" he reached his hands up and took them off "damn itâ ã he did this to you?" he lifted my face and turned it to the light "Fuck Megan" he wrapped his arms round me and hugged me to him "was this because of him making usâ ã?"

Falling into Place

"No, he had a deal go bad last night and he got mad that I wasn't wearing the right underwear when we got home" Kain's eyes grew wide "he just lashed out"

"Did he rape you?"

"No he was too wound up to get it up" I sighed to go along with the sigh that came from Kain "you got another glass?" I looked to the bottle of vodka he nodded and walked away from me into the kitchen and reached one from the cupboard as I walked over to the bottle. "Breakfast?" I asked looking at him

"Something like that" he sat down on the couch and poured both glasses I took the one he was holding up to me "so why did you come here?"

"I wanted to feel safe for a little while" I looked out of the window onto the water "heâ has another deal tonight andâ I looked at the glass "You don't understand half of the things he does" I looked back at him "What he'll stoop to, to seal the deal"

"Enlighten me?" He eased back on the couch

"I'm supposed to have sex with the guys wife" Kain almost dropped his glass "he's made me do it before and with other women to get things he wanted to be able to blackmail people" I sank the vodka and rolled the glass over my forehead "I don't want to Kain, I hate it I'm not like that" Tears rolled down my cheeks

"Does he make you do it with guys as well?" Kain got up and put hi drink on the table

"Noâ well you were the only one he made me have sex with, he's normally possessive against other menâ I don't know why it changed the other night" I looked at him "I didn't mind that" he took my glass and put it on the window ledge "I didn't mind with you" he frowned at me

"Why?" his voice sounded tight

"Because I feel safe with you around and I don't know whyâ maybe because you're giving me a way outâ getting him locked away will give me a chance to leave and start again" Kain shook his head and turned away from me and put his hands on the window ledge he muttered something under his breath

"Meg I'm not who you think I am"

"What?"

"Do you know what collateral damage is?"

"I don'tâ" I stammered "I don't understand"

"I'm a killer I was sent here to get rid of Weber he's got something on a lot of high flying people and I've been given the job of killing your future husband" Kain didn't look at me but held his stance "I was sent to get all the information I could from you about where and when things happened, And when the time is right I'm supposed to kill James and you if you are with him" I felt my heart sink "But I don't think I can do itâ for once in my career I can't kill a targetâ I won't do it" he looked over his shoulder at me "You're to innocent in this" He looked back out of the window "How safe do you feel now?" I took a deep breath, I think I knew deep down by some of the things he did and way he did them he was different.

Falling into Place

"As safe as I did before and safer than I do with the man I'm supposed to marry" I put my hand on his back "If death is the way I have to leave him then it's the way I have to do it" Kain at least I got to be with a real man again and feel special for a while, I blocked out James in the corner" Kain turned and looked at me his whole body seeming to tremble "again?" I stepped back from him and pulled the belt on my dress letting it fall open before shrugging it off "Please' tears over spilled my eyes Kain inhaled deeply and pulled me hard against him tipping my head back and kissing me gently at first before drawing back and looking at me "Please Kain" I murmured pushing up on my toes and kissing him again. He moaned into the kiss and scooped me into his arms and carried me to the couch !â !â !

â !â !â !â !â !.. I woke with a start tears wetting the pillow after my dream I looked behind me at Blake sound asleep, Kain saved me but Blake could possible give me my life back !â !â !â !..

Chapter 58: Oh crap

â lâ lâ lâ !.. I moved Blakes arm from round me and slipped out of bed and went to the bathroom, I felt so much better for sleep, I came back out Blake was lay looking over the room.

"Sorry I didn't mean to wake you" I walked back over to the bed He rolled onto his back smiling "what?"

"I could get used to waking up to seeing that sight everyday" his voice was rough from sleep "Loving you walking around naked, means no barriers"

'Barriers against what exactly?" I got back in the bed and pulled the cover over me to my breasts

"Everything" he tucked a piece of hair back behind my ear "we slept for almost eight hours" I looked at the clock

"So we didâ ; what time do e have to leave for dinner?" I turned on my side to look at him

"Well I thought if we leave here around six thirty then we can go have a drink first" He mimicked my pose "I keep waiting for us to start fighting"

"Well you're not saying anything stupid so right now it's all good" I laughed

"Wow wounded to the core" he rolled on to his back and clutched his chest

"Damn a drama queen as well as hot piece of ass" I pushed him "Thank you"

"For what?"

"Making me sleep and not humping me like some wild dog" He looked at me

"I'd never do that" he frowned

"Hmmmâ ; so what would you callâ !" the door knocked "Well that's timing" I went to get up Blake pulled me back down

"You don't have to go anywhere" he kissed my shoulder and got up picking up his jeans and pulling them on and going over to the door and opening it.

"Hey I brought you some food over since no one ate breakfast or lunch" Jessi's voice filled the room

"We're heading out to the city for dinner but you can come in because I know you just want to be nosey" Blake laughed as he pushed the door open for his sister to walk in. "Damn you smell like him" he muttered

"BLAKE" I snapped he shrugged and took the basket from Jessi. She looked at me with slight confusion I just smiled at her

"I'm going to go check on the horse" he picked up his shirt and pulled it on "Let you hens get to clucking"

'Damn I'm in the country" I shook my head as he put on his boots and his hat

Falling into Place

"Yes Ma'am you are" he winked at me "Be ready by 6.30" I nodded

"Heyâ ¸ please tell me we're not going in your truck?" he stopped at the door

"Nothing wrong with my truck it's only three months old"

"And smells like Skank" Jessi huffed making me giggle

"I'll ignore that" he shot her a look "We can take your car if you want but I'm driving" I opened my mouth to protest "Either that or it's the truck"

"Fine" I huffed he walked out of the door pulling it closed behind him "You're brother =can be a damn ass sometimes"

"You don't need to tell me I was raised with him" she sat on the bed "You look better"

"I feel it" I nodded "So how's Kain?"

"I made him take the pain meds and he's sleeping" she hugged her knees to her chest "Is that woman in the big cabin really your sister?... I asked Kain and he just changed the subject"

"Yes she's my real sister" I took a deep breath "I did have a family once with a big brother as well but I dated someone they didn't like and I became a nurse not a lawyer so I was shunned and kicked out of the family" I looked at her "the last time I saw any of my family was almost 3 years ago and I'm okay with it"

"I'd hate to not see my family"

"well things happen that make you see life's not perfect" I reached for the cover and got out of bed "I should get ready for dinner tonight I'm not sure how it will turn out"

"Why?"

"Well he's going to hear that he needs to deal with Kain and like it or don't' sniff round me" I went into the bathroom to get dressed.

"I can't see his problem with it" Jessi leant on the bathroom door frame "I mean I know you and Kain had a sexual thing" she flushed "And damn how do you stop wanting that man I mean I'll be glad when we can ditch the condoms and jutâ ¸. She stopped "not what you wanted to hear right?" She looked at my face as I opened the bathroom door.

"Birth control" she frowned at me "What month is it?"

"Juneâ ¸ why?" I chewed my cheek

"Do you guys have clinic here like a walk in deal?"

Yeah in two why?"

"I should have had my birth control shot two months ago" I raced for my purse "You got time to show me where it is?"

Falling into Place

"Sureâ Megs"

"Look I know I've been under stress for a while and my shot screed with my periods for years butâ!" She got wide eyed "Jessi I'm probably not butâ! out of the three men I've been with in the past two months I know one's seedless shall we say and the other two well, you know if your brother shoot blanks by any chance" She pulled a face.

"Let's go" She pulled my hand. Oh this was going to be interesting to say the leastâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !..

Chapter 59: Safety fist

â lâ lâ lâ !.. Jessi drove us into town at warp factor nine I think she was worrying more than I was. She dropped me at the clinic door.

"You go in and I'll find a spot to park" she smiled nervously at me "You'll be okay"

'I know Jessi you're the one freaking out" I winked at her inside I was screaming how could I have been so damn stupid. I walked inside and over to the girl on the reception desk her face looking really familiar

"Hey Megan" she chirped at me with a huge smile "What can we do for you?"

"I need to see a doctor about a personal matter"

"Well sure but I need to fill the doctor in on what you need" I groaned as the waiting room had become deathly silent.

"I'd like to have a pregnancy test" I whispered "and talk about birth control"

'Oh sureâ !" she beamed at me "I heard you and Blake Walker are getting pretty close" she taped on a computer and hell that boy that caught you when Sally tossed the rink on the bar damn fine for a Northern boy" she cocked her head I gave her a hard line smile "The nurse will call you in, in a minute but for the pregnancy test I need you to give a sample in this" she handed me a specimen jar "Bathroom is right over there honeyâ ! Hey Jessi how you doing today' she didn't miss a beat as Jessi walked in

"All good Charlotte" I walked into the bathroom keeping my eyes from making contact with anyone in the waiting room fingers crossed I was fine and it was just stress and hell the doctor was going to be putting in and IUD if it was negative. I peed into the pot and put in the little box in the wall and washed my hands and walked out into the waiting room Miss. Hesta had Jessi cornered and was talking up a storm I walked over and she clammed up immediately

"Miss Hesta" I smiled at her and pulled my cell phone from my purse

"Megan" she pulled her lips into a thin line "If you'll excuse me I need to see to some business" she got up and walked away.

'Did I do something wrong?" I looked at Jessi

"Yep you caused a stir in our little town" She squeezed my hand "So you know where you're going for dinner tonight?" I shook my head.

"Into San Antonio is all I know" I looked at her "But like I said I'm not sure how it will turn out and please don't tell your brother or Kain about me coming here today"

'I won'tâ ! hell that's not my place" she sighed as the Nurse came out and called me I got up

"Well wish me luck" I joked before I walked away from Jessiâ lâ !.

â lâ lâ lâ !. The sheer relief in the car on the way back to the ranch was amazing, the pregnancy test thank god had come back negative, and I'd had to sit through the entire promiscuousness talk like I was eighteen all

Falling into Place

over again. But I'd gotten him to fit an IUD so I was covered right away.

"You think it would be okay for Kain to go to the creek tonight?"

"Not to swim" I shook my head "He can go and ogle you in a bikini though I'm sure he'll appreciate that I can take his stitches out in a couple of days and then he'll be good to go" I looked across at her "you have it bad for him don't you?" she blushed beet red she just nodded "I say take him out for a picnic out there and romance himâ he's that sort of guy deep down" She chewed her lip

"He do things like that for you?"

"Noâ I'm not so much the hearts and flowers kinda girl, but he's sweet even with his job"

"He isâ Blake really does like you as well you know... I mean he really likes you" She ran her hand through his hair "I know my brother and women and you've got him on his butt"

"Well he's got a really nice one I'll give him that" I smirked "But he's a stubborn son of a bitch and I'm one tough assed girl that digs her heels in"

"I know" she giggled "he's always batted his eyelashes and girls have dropped at his feet and now you refuse to do that"

"The ass hole spanked my ass for standing up to him" I moaned

"Did you hit him back?" She looked at me open mouthed

"Well I hit something" I laughed as we pulled up to the old ranch house Blake was leaning on the rail of the bunk house talking to Sean and Reid.

"well don't take crap from him okay, I know you have skeletons in the closet but so does he" I frowned at her "Now go get ready while I make a yummy picnic for that hot man in there" she pointed to the old ranch house.

"Thanks for coming to the clinic with me"

"I would say it was fun but it was a little nerve wracking" she hugged me to her "and I'm glad you're not pregnant"

"Me too" I squeezed her hands

"You have ninety minutes Miss Miller" Blake called over

"Well you'd better get your pretty boy ass in the house to get ready hadn't you because you need to do a lot more to look right for tonight than I do" I called back making Blake stop with his beer half way to his mouth Sean eyed me and Reid started to laugh. I walked into the house. Kain was on his laptop sitting on the couch. "Hey"

"Hey you" he closed the laptop and looked at me "Well you look better than you did earlier the cowass seems to agree with you"

"Will you knock it off" I groaned "You and Blake need to stop waving your dicks at each other" I walked into the bedroom and opened the closet he walked in "you're both going to have to get used to each other" I pulled

Falling into Place

out a dress that I'd brought with me and hung it on the outside of the closet door "I like him but if he can't except our friendship then I'm not going to deal with him and will so kick your as if you don't make the effort to get on with the guy that one is the big brother to the girl you're infatuate with and two is taking me to bed" I pulled off my T-shirt and shorts "I'm going to go get ready for dinner" I kissed his cheek "and you need to get ready for Jessi" a huge grin appeared on his lips "see that smile tells me you're falling for her"

'I'm not" he scoffed

"Bull shit" I laughed and walked into the bathroom and showered and got ready for dinner with a really hot looking cowboyâ !â !â !â !.

Chapter 60: Dinner

â lâ lâ lâ !.. "Wow talk about going all out and are you wearing panties" Kain whistled

"Glad you approve and a girl doesn't tell" I picked up my purse "So you think this is hot enough without screaming slut" I turned on the spot

"You never look like a slut" he sighed "you look good Meg" I smiled at him as the door knocked I looked at my watch. "Well he's punctual I'll give him that" he got off the couch and walked to the door

"BE NICE" I hissed at him he feigns hurt I roll m y eyes and check my lipstick the red gloss hot enough to make most men stumble I smirked as Kain opened the door

"Hey Beautiful" He chuckled pulling a blushing Jessi in to his arms and kissing her "we can have some alone time as soon as Cinderella gets her ass out of here"

"Bite me it's my house" I Gibbs slapped him as Blake stepped on to the porch behind his sister, my breath hitched in my throat at the sight of him in a pristine white shirt with black pants and a black suit jacket over his arm. No sign of denim, cow boy boots "Hmmm" I moaned a little loud making Blake smirk with satisfaction I kissed Kain and hugged Jessi "Now you kids be good and if you can't be good be amazing" I stepped out from behind then "Ready to go"

"Oh hot Damn" Blakes Jaw went slack

http://www.polyvore.com/dinner_date/set?id=53035522

"I'm hoping that means I'm dressed okay for dinner" I ran my tongue over my lips watching his Adam's apple bob quickly

"Hey doofus she's talking to you" Jessi giggled pushing Blakes arm

"What" Blake gathered his composure I held out my keys to him

"You wanted to drive" I walked by him brushing his arm with mine as I went by him

"Yeah wellâ !"he coughed and walked behind me quickly and opened the door for me

'Well damn my brother does have manners" Jessi giggled snaking her arms round Kain

"He'd better remember them tonight" Kain watched as Blake walked round to the driver's side and got in.

"Your Pitt bull is watching us like a hawk"

"So we have time for drinks before dinner then?" I said making it clear I wasn't going to start the night off with a fight

"Yes ma'am" he nodded as he eased the car onto the highway "If that's alright with you" he stole a look at me and smirked "an damn I wish we'd been going for dinner in Wimberley" I frowned

"Okay why?"

Falling into Place

'Because damn I want everyone to see you like that' I grinned

"Alright but if we were going for dinner in Wimberley I'd be in jeans" I settled back as the lights of the city came in to view

"True" he rubbed his hand over his jaw. He pulled in to the Four Seasons hotel "They have a very good bar and one hell of a restaurant here"

Hmmmm how many women have you said that to?" I raised an eye brow at him as the valet opened my door and I stepped out he closed it and ran round to the driver's side and handed Blake the tag.

"I never have" he smiled stepping on to the curb with me "Miss. Miller" he put his hand in the small of my back "Damn have I told how good you look tonight" his hand ran lightly over my butt

"No but I think by the reaction you had I already knew cowboy" I smiled as the doorman opened the door for us. People looked round as we walked in. I'd spent the last three years in high end hotels and casino's round the world I knew how to act and how to carry myself, but I also knew how draining it was. We went and sat at the bar

"Good evening what can I get for you" the Bar tender smiled at us

"I'll take a Gray goose lemon on the rock and he'll take a neat Grey goose" I said without a second thought

"Wow" Blake eased in to the high stool next to mine his leg obviously hurting him "You got me drink bang on"

"You drank it in the Ole rig" I looked at him as the drinks were put down in front of us "Well Sally tossed it on the bar"

"I'm sorry about her" he frowned and rested his arms on the bar his left hand toying with the glass "I must seem like aâ" '"

"Total man whore" I giggled taking a drink and savoring it

"Well I was going to say idiot but I guess you have something there" He raised his glass to me "Thank you"

"For what?"

"For come to Texas and looking at a cowboy" he took a drink

"You make it sound like you want more than getting me naked under you" I moved on the stool so my legs were against his

"Am I that obvious" he sank his drink and held the glass to the bar tender

"Well yes, and that you're looking like you need Dutch courage oh and FYI you're not driving my car drunk" I reached into his jacket pocket and took out the tag from the valet and dropped it into my purse making him chuckle.

"My brothers not working tonight I'll be okay" he laughed

Falling into Place

"Yeah well you wouldn't be I you damaged my car" I sank my drink and the bartender took it and refilled it. I watched Blake run his finger round the rim of the glass "So you want more?"

"I want you; I know I want you" I hate to see the guys in the bar getting you up there to dance for them" he turned to face me properly he looked me over and smiled "you are the first think I think of when I get out of bed and the last thing when I lay down" all be it I want to spank you most of the time because you know how to push my buttons" I literally squirmed in the seat at the sound of his voice.

"I'm no good" I said taking a hard swallow "you know some things about me that would have a lot of men running from me"

"Do I look like a guy that give up easily hell I'm dealing with Kain right?"

"That is a non negotiable part of my life" my voice was stronger with that "It's a deal breaker" Blake looked a little taken aback "I will not give up my best friend for you or any man"

"Mr. Walker" the maitre d' walked over your table is ready

"Thank you Garrison" Blake didn't look away from me "We'll discuss this over dinner" he got off the stool and reached for my hand and tucked me in behind him as we went from the Bar to the restaurant

Chapter 61: Damn it

Blake pulled out my chair for me and slid it under me as I sat before he walked round to his seat and sat down.

"The family Wine Mr. Walker?" the Maitre d' smiled at him

"Sure" Blake's eyes were still fixed on me I looked from him to the Maitre d' and back as the guy nodded and walked away

"Family wine?"

"Deal breaker?" He sat back and tipped his head "are you and he still sleeping with each other?"

"Wow you have to ask me that after yesterday? I haven't had sex with Kain since before I got here and seriously is it any of your business when I slept with him? I didn't know it was an issue" I mirrored his pose crossing my legs under the table making sure my foot stroked his calf, I watched his pupils dilate while his face remained impassive.

"It makes me go cold when I think of him touching you"

"But it's okay for you to do what you want with sally?" the muscle in Blake's jaw twitched "Hmmm let's see shall we there was the night I got here and she gave me shit as soon as she met me and hanging round you like a fly round shit" I leant on the table "she made it a point to let me know she would fuck and suck you dry and it was just how you liked it" My voice was low and calm "I mean come on Blake we all know what you did behind the dumpster with her" he popped one eye brow "to me it makes no difference who you've been with and how many times you've done them, it's a waste of time effort and energy worrying about it, so why you worry about who has been with me is a waste of time" Blake blinked at me a slight smirk twitched on his lips as a waiter appeared with a bottle of wine.

"Mr. Walker" he showed the bottle to Blake.

"That's fine? and can you get us the Salmon and dill roulade and then the Steak" Blake looked at him

"Rare Mr. Walker?" Blake nodded "Ma'am?" he looked at me

"Medium please" I smiled at him he nodded again and hurried off. "You always do that?"

"Do what?"

"Order for a girl"

"No? I've never taken a girl other than my mother and sister out to dinner" he picked up the wine glass which made me smile seeing him with it in his ranch worn hands "why would I if I didn't like the girl enough?"

"So you're telling me you've never gone to dinner with a girl" I laughed.

"No I didn't say that I said I've never taken a girl to dinner" he bit his lip "I don't tolerate girls that want me just because of my check book" I chewed the inside of my cheek, hell his was the opposite to James who

Falling into Place

loved to let people know about the size of his check book. My hand went to the earrings in my ear that James had brought for me in a Jewelers in Monaco that had cost more than my car did.

"Money isn't everything" I said more to myself than to Blake

"No it isn't" He narrowed his eyes at me "The girl at the ranch" I nodded "your sister?"

"Yep" I looked down at the table cloth

"Are you going to open up to me?"

"I don't know?"

"You're scaredâ Of her" I looked up and laughed

"No far from it I'm hurt by her and my biological family" I shook my head "she was wearing a pendant today that was my grandmothersâ that's why I was upset when I came into the barn" I took a drink "cutting a long story short I'm on my own because according to my family I'm a gold digging whore" he coughed into his wine "And I wasn't supposed to be a nurse if I wanted a career I was supposed to join the family Law practice" I toyed with my glass "Like my mom and dad and my brother"

'Brother?"

"I have a big brother as well I nodded that is all about the country club and finding a Stepford wife to give him 2.4 brats and his mistress is in a crappy apartment in the city like my Dad has" I sat back as the waiter put the salmon roulade in front of us. I hadn't talked a whole lot about my family to anyone not even to James and Kain knew about them because he had files on all of us from his bosses "damn"

"You okay?" Blake frowned at me

"NO" I admitted I hadn't felt this off guard for a while. "Damn it" I fought with the lump that had come to my throat Blake got up and moved round the table and pulled me up out of my seat and into his arms holding me to him one hand in the small of my back and the other under my hair stroking the back of my neck

"I'm sorry I didn't think you'dâ wellâ I had no idea"

"No one does" I inhaled deeply the warm spice scent of his clean from a shower pulled at things deep in me Blake let go of me

"I'm sorry Meg" I shook my head and took a drink of the wine

"This is goodâ What did he mean family wine?" I changed the subject and looked at him his eyes seemed softer.

"My Grandparents own a winery and its pretty good stuff" he shrugged, the conversation lightened for the rest of dinner. The waiter walked over to us.

"Dessert Mr. Walker?" he asked

"I have that organized" Blake looked at him "Just the check please" he nodded and walked away.

Falling into Place

"You want me to get dinner?" I cocked my head

"No asked you" he smiled as the check was brought over he pulled out a black AMEX card and handed it to him without looking at him "Now I have dessert arranged but I've got it somewhere other than here" I frowned at him as his card was handed back and he signed.

"Okay you have me intrigued" Blake got up and held out his hand to me

"It's a little more intimate" I stopped and made him look at me

'You just want to get me naked again"

'What Noâ well I do but, just trust me" he chuckled as we walked back into the hotel lobby and over to the elevators.

"You got a room didn't you?" I groaned

"Will you just trust me" he shook his head as the doors opened and he pulled me in with him his arms slid round my waist and pulled me back against him as he hit the button for the top floor "You smell so good" he trailed a finger over my bare shoulder and moved my earring "Theses are pretty" I felt my blood run a little cold. The door dinged and opened onto a roof top deck overlooking the city.

"Good evening Mr. Walker I have a booth reserved for you" the Tall skinny blond beamed at him as she looked me up and down

"Thank you" We followed her over the roof top were booths were separated by gossamer drapes; she gestured to one and moved away from us "Hope you like champagne and strawberries"

"I do" I nodded sitting down

"Can we talk some more?"â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ

Chapter 62: shocking Blake

Blake reached for the champagne bottle and let the cork out with a dull pop. He poured it into two glasses and held one out for me before he dropped a strawberry into it. He eased back on the couch we were sitting on the lights of the city laid out below us.

"So can we talk some more?" he turned in his seat so he was facing me

"You're relentless aren't you?" I took a drink my head already slightly buzzed from the alcohol from the night.

"Yes" he smiled at me "We Googled you fiancÃ©"

"I guessed you would and he's my ex" I held up my hand "se no ring"

"You can see where it was" he caught my hand and ran his finger over the white mark on my ring finger that was one hell of a ring to leave a space that large" he looked at me "You had it all be it he was old" he chuckled

"He was twenty years older than I was" I shrugged attempting to pull my hand away from him he held it putting it on his thigh and covering it with his own.

"And rich?"

"Beyond" I nodded "But I didn't give a damn about the money, I grew up in a family with wealth I didn't need to think about stroking a check for anything growing up" He frowned at me "But I wanted to work for what I had so that's why I became the youngest chief Emergency and trauma nurse in the mid west, I worked hard to get there and fast"

"That's impressive" Blake smiled at me "and hell seeing you take charge the other day at the ranch" I felt a wave of pride for myself wash over me as I took another drink. "So where does Weber come in to this?"

"He'd been hurt while he was out one night and was brought to the ER and I was his nurse" Blakes thumb stroked the back of my hand absently as he listened to me.

"So how did that lead to you being engaged to him?" Blake pushed again I put the glass on the table and turned in the same way he had curling one leg under me to face him.

"He called the hospital every day, he sent gifts every day for a week trying to get me to talk to him and I ignored it as just some crazy guy, because believe me we used to get a lot of those especially at full moon and weekends" I laughed smiling remembering some of the really funny times I'd had when working "Then one day my entire locker room was filled with flowers and there was a note asking me for Coffee after my shift which as just after six am and I'd had a run of 11 night shifts, so call it tiredness and irrationality but I wentâ nothing wrong with going to a dinner packed with other nurses and Doctors and a ton of cops or so I thought" Blake let go of my hand and reached for both of our glasses and gave mine to me, I took a drink Blake took my other hand back only this time he linked his fingers with mine "I walked in and he was sitting at a booth at the far end and he took my breath away" Blakes brow furrowed "I'll never deny the fact he's one hell of a good looking guy with a body to match yours and Kain's but it wasn't just that, he radiated confidence and power just sitting there drinking coffee" I looked at him "I have a weaknessâ Kain calls it an Issue where strong dominant men are concernedâ I tend to lose my mind andâ well you've had the same effect on me" I moved so I was sitting right again.

Falling into Place

"What effect?" he moved forward bracing his elbows on his knees

"You got me naked and inside of me without much effort" I shrugged "it's a turn on to have a man like you doing things that you do" I lowered my voice and shook my head I was laying it all out and I knew Blake was now getting a huge ego trip I turned my head expecting to see a huge smug expression plastered across his face instead he was looking shocked and slightly confused.

"Doing the things that I do?" he murmured "I justâ€¦"

"You really don't see it do you?" I smiled

"I don't get it no" he shook his head

"You take charge and tell me how it's going to be and what I wantâ€¦ I have no will power with strong willed men" I shrugged "I'm hard headed and a bitch when I need to be but you tell me our taking me to bed and I'm thereâ€¦ Wow I just heard how bad that sounded" I sank the champagne like it was a beer and chewed on the strawberry that was in the bottom Blake moved forward and refilled the glass "Wow I just sounded like a total slut"

"No you didn'tâ€¦ you sound like a woman that's had a rough deal?"

"Never looked like it from the outside" I sighed

"No it didn't look like it like the Yacht in the south of France" he rubbed his hand over the stubble on his face

"You know my first date with him was in Milan"

"Italy" I nodded "I was still wearing my scrubs from the hospitalâ€¦ I never went back" Blake looked at me "It's was really good to begin with but it changed fast"

"So why agree to marry him"

"I never didâ€¦ he never asked me he put the ring on my finger before we left to go to the Opera one night and told me he was marrying me" I wanted to cry again "I didn't have a choice"â€¦

Chapter 63: Full story

Blake signaled for the waitress she clipped her way over

"Bottle of Grey goose lemon" he said quickly "two glasses" she shot him a I'll bend over if you ask me to smile and walked away I was looking down at the white mark on my finger shaking my head. "You could have said no"

"James isn't a man that takes no for an answer on anything and if you don't do what he wants it gets ugly fast" I couldn't look at him "all because I have no will power for dominant men I loved in hell for three years the only thing that stopped me killing myself to get out of it was Kain" I stopped talking as the waitress came over with the glasses and a bottle of grey goose in an ice bucket.

"Anything else Mr. Walker?" She tipped her head and fluttered her eye lashes

"Can you cal down to reception and see is suite 2102 is availableâ I have a feeling it's going to be a long assed night" he added

"Yes sir" she walked away again

"A room what's this, the girl tells you all you have to do is grab her by the hair and she'll screw the ass of you, you want to get a room" I snapped a little

"No" he picked up the ice bucket and put the glasses in it as the waitress came over with a room key "We have both drunk way too much to drive home safely and I can't see either of us stopping drinking anytime soon" He took the key card and pushed it into this pocket and handed the girl a tip before pulling me up "I'd rather do it in privacy" I nodded the elevator went down just three floors he strode down the hall making sure he kept a hold on my hand. He stopped outside a double set of doors and set the ice bucket down and pulled the card key from his pocket and unlocked the door. He pushed it open for me I stepped in as he let go of me to scoop up the bucket. In front of me was a large suite with a sitting area I put my purse down as I heard the door lock behind me. Blake walked round me and put the bucket on the table and took off his jacket and tossed it on one of the two couches.

"I can get a cab home" I said looking at him through the floor to ceiling windows. He stopped what he was doing and looked at me before turning to face me

"If you want that then I'm not going to stop you" his voice was soft and caring "I'm not going to make you do anything you don't want to do" he stepped forward and then stopped "Is home what you want?" I shook my head.

"I thought you'd want me gone" why did I feel so low and afraid of him rejecting me

"I'd tell you if I did" he poured the vodka into the glasses and came over and handed one to me "So fit Kain into the picture" I looked up at him "You've gone this far and I'm still here" he took my free hand and pulled me to the couch and sat me down "And notice I used his name and didn't snarl" I didn't rise to him

"You really want to know all of it?"

"I do" He lifted a piece of my hair I sank the vodka and reached for the bottle and laughed.

Falling into Place

"What?" He drank his and held out the glass

"It's going to be interesting to see your reaction when I tell you all of it" I sat back and kicked off my heels

"Will I need to call for another bottle of liquor?"

"You never know" I shrugged "Kain came into my life eighteen months ago; he was James version of security for me and him on top of meat heads he'd already got, He got Kain's number from some business acquaintance. He was Ex-navy seal apparently with a dishonorable discharge" I sipped my drink the buzz increasing in my head, but I wasn't sure if it was mixing all the alcohol or because I was laying everything out. "The first time I met him I was lay in the deck of a yacht in the harbor at Monte Carlo" My hand went to my earrings and I shuddered fetching them out of my ears and tossing them onto my purse. Blake frowned I ignored it. "There was something about him from the get go he seemed dangerous out the gate and he never went anywhere without two guns and a knife" I took another drink "He was assigned to be my shadow when James wasn't with me I couldn't go anywhere without clearing it with James and having Kain with me for the first six months he was distant and just I don't know he worked closer and closer with James and he saw a lot of things and he saw the true way James treated me behind closed doors, a lot of the verbal abuse" I sank the rest of my drink and pushed the glass on the table and sat back "One day he found me sitting in the closet crying nursing a few bruises and that's when he came out to me?"

"He's GAY?" Blake choked on his drink I groaned and reached for the vodka and drank from the bottle this time.

"No he's not he came out as a guy working for the government to bring James to justice" I chewed my lip "If I could help him with information he'd help me get free of him" so I did a few months after that I think James had either been told Kain and I had been for lunches out of town, so I could talk to him about things or Kain's Boss had gone and flipped on us" Blake moved forward and refilled both of our glasses "Three months ago we were going to a charity thing and I was getting ready in the bathroom all dressed and ready to go and James came in and we had a few words and he decided he was going to get me all heated and he was going to have sex with me even if it meant we were going to be late, He pinned me to the wall and pushed his fingers into me" I felt tears prick my eyes, Kain interrupted us there was a cop at the door for some reason and he had to see James" I shook my head "James pulled away from me mad as hell about it and stormed off, Kain stayed behind to make sure I was okay, he was floored that James did that to me"

"Did you want him to touch you?" I shook my head

"But like I said, I give in I let it happen because it turns me on" I felt tears run down my cheeks Blake moved to put his arm round me I shook my head making him back off "You wanted to hear all of it let me finish" please" he backed off and nodded "James came back into the room and was suspicious that something was going on" he asked Kain if he wanted me and Kain told him he wasn't interested in another man's woman, James wasn't satisfied with that and told Kain That he wanted to see me with my mouth" I closed my eyes

"Oh god" Blake murmured

"He forced me to my knees in front of Kain and told him that if he didn't go along with it he'd kill both of us. He made Kain have sex with me in our bed while he watched" Blake's jaw went slack a week after that James had wanted rough sex and I wasn't well so he beat me and he marked my face. The day after he told me he wanted me to sleep with a guy's wife to seal a deal"

"He expected you to go to bed with a WOMAN?" Blake sank his drink

Falling into Place

"It wasn't the first time he'd got me to do that" I couldn't even look at Blake, silent tears fell harder "when James left for a business meeting I went to Kain's apartment, since the night he and I hadâ he was the only person I trusted and felt safe with because of everything that had happened and he'd avoided me since 'that' nightâ I went to his place and I just wanted to be held for a while by someone not using me, I asked him to make love to me again because it was different with himâ it was something I'd never had just normal loving kind of sex" I toyed with the glass in my hands "Kain and I did that a few times a week till I came to Texasâ but we both know it's not what either of wanted, Kain gave me a way out in more ways than one, he stopped me going out of my mind and he got me hereâ and I met you" I finally rasied my eyes and looked at Blake. He had no color in his face and he looked like he wanted to throw or punch something,. I had no idea what he was thinkingâ lâ lâ lâ lâ .

Chapter 64: tail spin

Blake got up from the couch and paced in front of the window, his hand with its white knuckle grip on the glass in his hand.

"There's one more thing you need to know"

"MORE?" he looked exasperated "How much more can there be Megan?" he shook his head in disbelief

"This is about Kain" Blake rolled his eyes skyward "He's not just working for the government gathering information He was sent to kill James and me" Blake stopped and swayed a little like a tree caught in a breeze "He's assassin for them" Blake sat heavily on the end of the table "When you say it out loud it's like some bad movie script but this was my life this is why I have no one other than Kain and if it hadn't been for that night that changed things between Kain and I, I wouldn't be here and I might very well have a bullet in my head" He looked at me

"And you let him near my sister?" he snapped at me "You let him close to"

"He's not a danger to her. Hell he's in love with your sister and she loves him that's plain and simple" I bit back

"He's a FUKCING KILLER MEGAN AND HE'S SCREWING MY SISTER"

"And he was fucking me as well and didn't kill me when he was supposed to" I slammed my glass down "He's done he's left that life"

"How the hell can he leave, it you said it yourself he's an assassin for the damn government you think they let people like him just quit Fuck" he got up and paced again "he need to get the hell away from the ranch" I took the last of my drink and picked up my purse and earrings. I walked over to him and opened his hand and put the earrings in his palm. He scowled at me.

"Sorry, for ruining things for you take these and I don't know buy a girlfriend" I turned away from him and bent picking up my shoes "I told you Kain for me was a deal breaker, he's done nothing wrong and your sister knows what he is and what he was supposed to do and she still loves him" His mouth fell open as he stood my earrings in his one hand his drink in the other. "I know now to change my name and just make up a load of bullshit about my life and to stay away from relationships because it will always have to be lies" I took a deep breath "Thank you for" I shook my head "Good bye Blake" I started across the hotel room

"What" He stammered I heard a thud and then cursing as he got up and banged his shin off of the table he'd been sitting on "Fuck" I heard the earring and the glass hit the table. I put my hand on the door as his body slammed into his stopping me from opening it I looked down "You tell me all this and then you go to walk out on me How the hell do you expect me to react when you tell me my sister is with a man like him just because you don't like your sister I happen to love and give a damn about mine" I rounded on him my fist balling and making contact with his jaw in a resounding crack that made him stagger back.

"You're a fucking ass hole Blake Walker You fucking asked me no you begged me to tell even after I told you more than once it wasn't pretty and I told you they shunned me and they disowned me it was never the other way round how would you feel if it was your family that had done that to you" Blake put his hand up to his jaw "Stick to the air heads you like to stick your dick in you can't handle my shit" I wrenched open the door

Chapter 65: His choice

â lâ lâ lâ lâ ! I heard voice in the other room and I rolled over and looked at the clock on the nightstand eleven am" I sat up and ran my fingers through my hair. I got out of bed and dragged the sheet with me wrapping it round myself I opened the door to the other room. Blake was sitting up with a pot of coffee in front of him his elbows braced on his knees his cell phone at his ear, stripped to the waist the honey color of his skin catching the light coming through the window.

"We're both fine Mom we just had too much to drink so we stayed in the cityâ !" he sighed "I don't care about your rules Momma sorry I don't mean toâ ! That was different I was twenty oneâ ! momma below the belt" He snapped "Don't tell me who I can see and date if I want to bend Megan over the hood of my truck and fucker her in front of the ranch house I willâ !" I felt my eye brow raise "Fine pack my things and I'll leave but you'll be down a hand and down a vet because I won't be working for youâ ! well what the hell do you want me to do I've fallen in love with the girl but there is a few things we're working outâ ! Yes Kain is a problem but not in the way you thinkâ ! She's not engaged Momma she isn't with the guy in the internetâ ! he was a total ass to her and Kain helped her get awayâ !" I pushed the bedroom door too again

He was in love with meâ ! What the hell I was ready to kill him last night and he surely wouldn't want me after everything that was said last night. I looked down at my knuckles where there was a faint trace of a bruise from where I'd punched him the night before. I walked round in a circle and heard his phone drop on to the table and him groan. I pulled open the door and stepped out for a second time. Blake looked up his coffee cup in his hands.

"Hi" he murmured "Sleep well?"

"Eventually" I nodded

"Coffee?"

"Please" Oh the atmosphere was thick and tense I walked through the room as he poured thick dark coffee into the second cup. I sat on the opposite couch bunching the sheet round me he handed it to me "How did you sleep?"

"Like crapâ ! the woman I wanted in my arms was lying in another room breaking her heart" I looked down at the coffee in the cup "I came in after an hour and you were tightly wrapped round the pillow sobbing hard" his voice was tight like he was trying to control it. "It took me everything I had not to get in that bed with you and pull you into my arms" He put his cup down.

"I wish I was a normal girl that just came here looking for work because things could be so differentâ !" I croaked my throat hurt, I sipped the coffee

"I want you Meganâ ! I'll take Kain as well if I have to. I want to be the safety net you need that can love you in the way you deserve" He moved round the table and sat on it "All I've thought about all night was everything you told me and you didn't ask for any of it" he lifted my chin making me look at him, there was a dark bruise running the length of his jaw "I got sad, I got angry as hell with you with Kain and with the guy that put you in dangerâ ! I wanted to go to the ranch and literally throw your sister and her air head friends out on their prissy asses for upsetting you, I've told my mother I want to be with youâ ! I don't want you to leave"

"What if James comes after me?"

Falling into Place

"Then this cowboy and your Best friend will make him wish he'd never walked into your hospital" He took a deep breath "You said Kain was a killer, he can probably shot better than any of us" a slight smile toyed on his lips "I'm sorry for everything I said to you the way I reacted to everything" he moved closer to me "I'm so sorry" his lips brushed mine lightly. My head was literally spinning as he pulled back I shook my head making him frown at me I reached up and held his face in my hands and brought his mouth back to mine and kissed him with urgency and relief.

"I'm sorry for punching you" I moaned into the kiss

"I deserved it but hell I'm steering clear of your flying fists" He sat back and glanced down his eyes growing darker at the view from the sheet slipping to my waist. "You should get dressed" he said looking back at my face before my will power leaves the building.

"I thought you wanted me?" I asked with confusion

"I do hell I would love to have had this room last night without the drama because I don't think either of us would be able to walk" he moved his hand and pulled up the sheet "But I want to show you I'm not just looking to get you into bed" he kissed me again "And I need to try to calm my mother down before she has a heart attack and sets Sean on you for something. I snorted a little

"I don't' think your brother needs an excuse he doesn't like me anyway"

"He will" Blake tipped his head and took my hand and dropped my earrings into it "Do I want to know where these came from"

"They're mine from James" I looked at the diamonds in my hands "call then insurance"

"Like the ring?" I nodded

"Go get dressed and let's face the music"â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ l.

Chapter 66: Blakes in trouble

The Music was low enough so it was just to the point of being heard as Blake drove us back to the ranch both of us quiet in deep pockets of thought, I was spent the relief of getting the ten ton weight off my back about my life before Texas only over shadowed by the reaction of Blake, he said he wanted me, but could my revelations be too much, I put my head back and closed my eyes, maybe it would have been better if Kain had gone through with what he was supposed to do. I jumped as Blake's hand took mine and pulled it on to his lap.

"You nervous about facing people"

"No not really, I'm just nervous well scared" he frowned and turned his head as he pulled into the driveway of the ranch

"Of what?"

"You" Blake blanched

"I won't be like him, I couldn't be like that" His thumb rubbed the back of my hand "No man should be like that" I smiled and shook my head.

"It's not that" I shrugged

"Then what?"

"I don't know if you'll not wake up and realize that you don't like and can't handle the things I've done" I chewed my lip

"The only thing I see that you did because you wanted to was go to bed with Kain after you were pushed into it, do I like it? No, I don't but did I know you then?" he shook his head "I can't do anything about it" He pulled up outside my house and turned off the engine. "I have to go try to make nice to my mother, you go shower and change and I'll be back in a while" I hesitated "Don't leave" damn was he able to read minds?

"Don't be long then because I can't make promises" I put my hand on the door handle as he got out the other side. He came round to me and put his hands on my hips

"Please wait for me" I nodded he looked like he wanted to say something else before he brushed his lips against mine and he walked in his usual long strides toward the main house raising hand to two of the hands that were taking out a group of riders. I took a deep breath and walked into the house.

"Hey next time lover boy wants to keep you out all night call me" Kain walked out of the kitchen "Okay what happened" his hand went to the back of his waistband where I knew his gun was I dropped my purse on the couch and sat down "Son of a bitch I knew he was a fucking ass"

"It's not Blake" I leant forward and took off my heels "I told him all of it the whole damn mess of it right down to why we're the way we are with each other" I looked at Kain he let his hands fall back to his sides "he still has an issue with you" Kain smirked and shook his head "But he I think at least gets it or understands it more" Kain sat on the table in front of me and put his hands on my knees

"He knows we're not together right?" I nodded "did he run for the hills?"

Falling into Place

"No, but I think he will. I laid it all out Kain I mean all of it down to the women" I closed my eyes "and what you were sent to do" Kain nodded

"You really like this guy don't you" he smiled

"Yes" I took a deep breath "But I don't want to fall in love with himâ I can't get hurt again"

"I know it's had but he's so far remove from Weber it's polar opposite, I'm not a fan you know that but I'm in love with his little sister, hell I didn't want to fall in love with her but I did, she just so sweet and normal, I want normal" he shrugged "since I was eighteen I've been military, since twenty three I've been a deadly weapon" Kain sounded tired "I want normal and even if it's only for a whileâ you have the chance of a normal guy all be it a cowboy, I know what you went through honey and I'd have taken you away from it to a deserted island but you deserve a man that can give you everything and not have to live with the images of your past" I frowned "I mean Blake didn't see the things you went through he hasn't got the mental images of it hearing about it is one thing" I flopped back on the couch

"I'm ready to run"

"You run and I'll track you and bring right back here" I looked at him and smiled I got up and walked toward the bedroom

"I'd laugh at you but I know you would" he nodded I showered and pulled on jeans and a shirt. I walked out of the bedroom Jessi was sitting on Kain's lap on the couch looking a little pale. "Hey" I smiled at her

"Blakes in trouble with Momma" She blurted out

"Because of me" She nodded "Momma is on fire" I looked at Kain walked to the door

"Where are you going?" Kain asked

"He's not going to get the blame because of me" I opened the door

"Megs stop" Kain and Jessi chased after me I could here shouting from the deck "She's not happy" Jessi caught my arm "I told her I was together with Kain and she wasn't happy and thenâ!" she stopped and I followed her line of sight Blake and Joanne were both looking my way and both looking less than happyâ !â !â !..

Chapter 67: Apron strings

I stepped onto the patio by the pool my eyes flitting between the two of them.

"Joanne I understand you're not happy but don't blame me"

"When were you going to mention the baby? Blake stepped forward "We spent the night together and you never thought of mentioning it?"

"What?" I stopped walking

"The baby you're having do you have any idea who is the father" Joanne snapped

"Momma" Blake growled

"Well she's let three guys into her underwear in a short space of time so it could be anyone" I shook my head and looked round at Jessi and Kain who were both looking as confused as I felt

"Whoa" Kain stepped forward

"Well you've been there done that" Joanne glared at him "now I'm having to deal with you sleeping with my daughter what you collect notches on your bed post"

"Hey" I snapped "I have no idea what the hell you're talking about right now but you bite at him and"

"You went to the doctors the other day" Blake tipped his head

"I went yesterday before we went to dinner" I put my hands on his hips "And what business is it of any of you why I was there?"

"Because you're sleeping with my son trying to trap him with some other mans baby" Joanne shook her head "Well I'm done with whores trying to date my boys for their bank balances you can pack up your things and get the hell out of this town"

"Yes Ma'am" I shrugged "But just to put you right on a few things and you as well Blake. I'm not pregnant I had a damn test and I'm clean and offended that you even think you can attack me like this"

"Meg" Blake stepped forward

"Don't Obviously nothing I said to you last night hit home did it or it did but I'm just not worth the risk" Ow this was killing me talking to him like this I thought he might be a little different "Believe me I've been round the world for the last three years the asshole I was engaged to was a billionaire the money means nothing" I felt tears sting my eyes "You need to untie the apron strings from round his neck before he chokes and let him find a woman for himself and you need to grow the hell up and stop being the macho asshole and be the Blake I saw last night because he was a really nice guy" I turned away from them Kain looked at me I just shook my head "Jess take care of him he's worth it" I walked away from them. I wanted to grab my things and get out.

"What the hell was that?" Jessi looked at Blake and Joanne "Who the hell said she was pregnant?"

Falling into Place

'someone over heard her asking for a test" Joanne shrugged

"She needed birth control I went with her" Jessi threw up her hands "You guys are insane and Momma you're going to have to get used to Kain being around here or I'm leaving with him"

"With all due respect Mrs. Walker my best friend wants a normal life for once she's lived in hell for years" he looked away from Joanne and looked right at Bake "She opened up and let you in and you just fucked that trust"

"Go make sure she's okay" Jessi put her hand on Kain's arm

"I'll go" Blake moved forward

"Don't you even dare go near her right now" Kain pointed his finger at Blake "Because I know for a fact she'll be leaving here as soon as she's packed. Why attack her like that that's just bully tactics" Kain kissed Jessi "Make sure your brother keeps his ass here" she nodded as he walked away

"Momma" Blake looked at her "I'm going to get her back I'm in love with her end of story my temper gets the better of me and you pushed me into snapping" his teeth were gritted "I'm going to be looking for a house off the ranch I'm twenty seven years old and you're trying to rule all of our lives you match made with Sean and Sylvia, you tried to get Reid to go out with a girl from town because he'd met his wife on spring break, I have son somewhere in this damn country that I don't even know because you chased the girl away and we won't even start on how you treat Jess since she got knocked up and lost the baby"

"Nice Blake" Jessi snapped

"I didn't mean it like that I'm trying to prove a point we're all grown adults and" He rubbed his temples "Fuck this I'm done" he threw up his arms and headed toward the barn leaving Jess and Joanne standing. lol

Chapter 68: So damn tired

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !. I heard the door open to the house and Kain's heavy footsteps stopped in the doorway of the bedroom as I pushed clothes into a bag and turned to the dresser.

"I have to ask this" His voice was its usual calm and steady tone

"What?" I pulled shirts from the dresser and pushed them into the bag

"Do you love him?" I stopped and braced my hands on the foot of the bed

"I can't afford to hand my heart over again"

"That isn't the answer to the question that's avoiding it" he pushed off the door frame and came over to me
"You want to throw this away?"

"Blake just did that himself" I looked at Kain "It was a mistake to come here, it was a mistake to think I could even go back to a normal life" I zipped up the bag and walked back to the dresser and pulled out the jewelry roll an un-rolled it

"It wasn't a mistake it was what you needed to do"

"No I thought it was what I needed, but it's obvious from people's reactions about meâ !" I lifted the ring from the roll

"Meg" I looked at Kain as a tear spilled over and ran down my cheek, he shook his head

"You got a good girl with Jessi" I lifted my hand and wiped the tear I put my arms round his neck and hugged him to me "I don't know if it's going to be safe to keep in touch but try to keep under the radar" I let go of him and pushed the ring on to my finger. "Better the devil you know than having to live a lie right?" I put the roll into my bag and put it on my shoulder

"Don'tâ ! DONT YOU DARE?" Kain's entire demeanor changed his eyes darkened and his shoulders hunched "You're not going back to himâ ! There is going to be another guy like me gunning for Weber and now you because you know too much about things" He gripped my arms "You can't go back to himâ ! what the hell do you think Weber will do to you for leaving him, I'm not there to protect you"

"I'm going to be okay Kain" I pulled out of his hold and stepped round him

"Do I have to tie you to the damn bed to stop you going" He shouted after me as I opened the front door

"I'm sorry" I looked at him

"MEGAN SO HELP ME" he charged through the house as I tossed my bag in the trunk of my car. Jessi was coming across the grass toward the house "YOU'RE NOT LEAVING NOT TO GO BACK TO WEBER OVER MY FUCKING DEAD BODY" he yelled Kain rarely lost his temper he was controlled and trained to hold emotion in be a wall of sorts. He moved in front of the driver's door.

"Not much choice for me is there, what man will want me after what's happened, I can't live for the rest of my life with lies round me I can't do itâ ! I have nothing and no oneâ ! I have you but you put a damn target on

Chapter 69: Facing off

! Kain Pointed the gun at the front tire popping off another bullet deflating it to match the rear Blake's jaw had gone slack as the deadly side to Kain took over again. He walked round the car aimed and took out the other two tires. He tucked the gun away and looked at Blake as he opened my trunk and pulled out my Bag

"You think you can handle her because right now I want to blow up at her" Kain said Blake nodded he glanced back at Jessi

"You need me?" she murmured, he nodded and held out his hand to her she grabbed it and he pulled her into his side kissing the top of her head. I got out of the car Kain looked back over his shoulder at me !

"I can't even talk to you right now Megan" Kain shook his head. I closed my eyes and slid down the door of the car I wrapped my arms around my knees and put my forehead against them. I heard Blake move round the car.

"Phone?" his tone was hard and clipped, I didn't look up "Meagan where is your phone?"

"Why?"

"Because I asked you for it"

"Why?"

"Fine I'll just take your Purse and I'll be in the barn if and when you come to your god damn senses" He reached in to the car and pulled out my purse

"Don't you dare" I scrambled to my feet and went to snatch it away from him, he held it out at arm's length

"I'm not having you calling for a cab to pick you up" he snapped and turned on his heel and walked away, my purse hanging from his hand. Honestly the man knew exactly how to get on my nerves all the time. He made me so mad and infuriated and yet he looked so damn sexy when he was angry.

He'd got a nerve talking to me like he had after it was him and his mother that had started this. Kain was beyond angry with me and that scared me, but I knew I had to let him calm down before I spoke to him and reasoned with him. Blake was my biggest concern right now, I should be allowed to do what I wanted to do, what I thought was right for me and for the safety of everyone else. I pushed up from the ground noticing a bunch of the hands on the porch of the bunk house watching the drama unfolding. As much as I wanted to run and keep running until I reached town I needed my purse to get anywhere, I knew I could call James and he'd be here as soon as he could get his plane off the ground and down here to Texas, but I didn't want to risk Kain or anyone I'd met and cared about. I strode across the grass toward the barn, the heat already to the point of being overbearing.

I pulled open the door Blake was stripped to the waist hoisting feed sacks from the floor to the pile in the corner; he picked up a red braided rope from the floor and coiled it over his shoulder. The tight muscles in his arms and back moving under the golden skin. My purse was hung from a hook in the back of scout's stall at least I wasn't afraid of that horse and I'd go and get it.

"Don't even think about it" Blakes voice seemed to echo round the barn

Falling into Place

"You've got one hell of a damn nerve talking to me the way you did out there" I walked toward the stall hoping I was going to be quicker than him.

"And you've got a DAMN NERVE EVEN THINKING OF GOING BACK TO THAT GUY THAT FUCKED YOU OVER" he snapped rounding on me, he strode over, his body was a wall of toned muscle each of his abs defined as a bead of sweat rolled across them making me shiver inwardly and I couldn't help but be turned on by the strength in his voice. It didn't matter what he did he somehow turned me on. Even though he'd done what he'd done outside something about him lit me up like a Christmas tree sexually.

"You don't seem to get it and you think that I want to put up with you and this shit?" I bit back "I just had to deal with you and your momma thinking I was pregnant and she basically told me I was a slut and you let her"

"If you'd hung around for a little while you'd have heard me giving me mother as good as she gave you. I heard everything you told me last night and it killed me listening to you crying and I didn't want to be the asshole getting into your underwear and taking advantage, but you should have told me about the trip to the doctors I knew the situation with that Weber guy and that you and Kain had been together and hell I knew we didn't use protection"

"But you took her word for it over mine and I'd laid it all out for you and you took my heart and stomped on it in the blink of an eye, I thought you were different I wanted it to be normal but how can it be!" He ran his hand through his hair, the frustration all over his face

"You know what your goddamn problem is Meg? You won't listen. I am trying to tell you I care and you are so busy going on and on." He moved closer closing the gap between us to the point I could feel the warmth from his chest. I inhaled the hard working scent of him as the light glistened on the beads of moisture on his chest, he put his hands on his hips causing the rope to brush against my arm goose bumps rising quickly and heat to shoot through me. I was intoxicated by him.

I shook my head trying to clear it, there was no way I was going to let him get to me, but I couldn't think with him this close especially Blake looked me over I felt my lips part and my breathing hiked as the look in his eyes changed. They look on that lustful stare and all I could think of was what he might be thinking he wanted to do to me. I took a step backwards, to put some distance between us and be able to think, but he immediately followed. He had me pressed up against the rail and there was nowhere to go

Chapter 70: WHAT THE HELL

He leaned down nuzzling my neck as he growled in my ear. "You don't want him, you don't want to go back to that rich fuck" his breath was hot against my neck "I Won't let him have you, I want you Megan, and don't ever say you don't want me Meg because we both know it's a lie." I jerked my head back and got lost in his eyes

"I, what are you..." I stammered, he was making me lose my train of thought. He took my arms, holding them behind my back as his legs moved to either side of mine. His hips pushed forward I could feel him pressing up against me making me catch my breath.

"Oh don't lie to me Meg. I can see it in your eyes...you want me and I want you as mine just mine" He shifted his weight I caught my lip between my teeth "I want to take you and make you mine, do things to you to make you scream my name over and over again so the whole world will know you are with me and I am pleasuring you like no else ever has"

The way he said it was so possessive and yet still un-possessive all at the same time, and damn that sounded just like what I needed right now. But no way was he going to win like this. I had given in to easily in previously situations. He might be hot, so very, very hot, and I might want, no scratch that I do want him. But he is not getting away with it.

I put my hands up and laid them flat on his chest I loved feeling his hard muscles under my hand, though I would prefer something else there. Focus Megan, I pushed him back making his eyes grow wide

"You just don't seem to get it Blake. I am not Sally you can't just get a hard on and lick your lips and expect everything to be better because you're Hot" He popped an eyebrow and a smirk played on his lips he moved forward putting his hands back on the rail either side of me "Stop smiling and don't you dare hold me here when I am arguing with you. You don't own me and you won't win like that" Oh I was ranting and not making a whole lot of sense because those eyes were burning into me and it felt like my clothes were wanting to fall off in front of him right now "If you think that will get you what you want, why don't you take it all the way then huh?" I cocked my head to the side half of me screaming at the other half to shut the hell up, I'd lost every train of thought and idea of why I was fighting with him "Does that get your rocks off on, then why not just rope me up to the railing, then I can't go anywhere huh?" He looked bemused and he shook his head pushing his tongue into his cheek "Yeah that's what I thought. You're a bunch of talk and testosterone and very little action" he glared at me.

"You know what you are? You're just so goddamn stubborn. I thought when I gave you a good spanking you learned your lesson but maybe this is really what you need, you need another spanking to learn your lesson but this time I might not be so nice" he murmured "is that what you want Megan, another spanking?" his voice became gravelly

I couldn't tell whether I was still mad or turned on as all hell at the moment. I wanted punch him and yet kiss him, hate and love him at the same time.

"Please, you got away with it once but you can't handle me Blake. You better learn that" I stammered trying to sound convincing

"Oh yeah?" he cocked his head

Falling into Place

"Yeah." He got closer to me. It amazed me how I still didn't flinch around him even when I knew he was mad. And yet... "What the hell are you doing?" â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !

Chapter 71: tied in the barn

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !.. He took the rope off his shoulder.

"Don't...I mean it Blake...you can't"

"I don't back off from a challenge" he chuckled

"You son of aâ !" He cut me with a kiss unlike anything we had before. It was hot as we were both filled with raging passion that needed to get out. My shirt quickly went over my head; the feeling of his damp hot Skin against mine sent tingles running through my body.

He leaned down sucking hard on my neck, to the point that made my knees buckle. My head fell back as he cupped my breasts playing with my nipples through the lace of my bra. My hands moved over his broad shoulders and back before teasing his muscles with my nails as I moved lower towards the waistband of his jeans. His muscles tensed under my hand and he caught his breath causing me to smirk, before I could do more, he took my hands in his. His mouth found its way back to mine, my mind turned to instant mush. I felt something wrap around my wrist but I was too busy waging war with his tongue and moaning into the kiss as he pressed his hips against me allowing me to feel his hardness fully prominent against my hip

Blake pulled back breaking off the kiss he gripped my shoulder and turned me around to face the rail. As he bent me over I pushed my butt against him rubbing across his groin, making us both groan and he stopped for a moment. He took a breath and moved quicker than I did his hand moving quickly and efficiently as he roped my hands together and round the rail so I had no choice but to stay bent over it. My anger spiked along with how turned on I was. His hand slid up my arms to my back and he flicked open the hooks and eyes on my strapless bra letting it fall to the ground at my feet

"You were saying?" he murmured his fingers toying with my breasts

"Get me out of here Blake. I mean it. This is not funny?" why did my breath sound like I was some breathless airhead in a movie

Blake moved closer to me his chest brushed my back as he bent over me to put his mouth next to my ears he ran his hand over my breast bringing it round to my back and he smoothed over the denim of my shorts that covered my ass. I bit my lip suppressing the moan his other hand took a different path he cupped me between my legs the heat more than obvious even through my shorts

"It's not supposed to be funny" He nudged the side of my neck with his nose as the hand on my ass caressing still, his fingertips skimming the leg of my shorts "but it is one hell of a turn onâ ! and I can feel hot and turned on you are" Oh this man made me see stars with his words "You need to learn how not to piss me off and hell did you just piss me off with threatening to run away" He undid my belt, letting his finger trail under the open button. "It's time for you to learn your lesson Miss Miller" The words sent shivers through me.

"I mean it Blake" I gasped "This is notâ !OW DAMN IT" His hand came down hard across my butt. It smarted but not as bad as when he'd done it before "BLAKâ ! OHH" His hand came down several more times and I could already feel myself getting hotter. His hand came down evenly on one cheek and then the other. He massaged it for a moment before bringing it down again

"Now, Megan. You think maybe learned your lesson?" He pressed his lips to my shoulder Are you going to apologize so I can kiss it better?" My knees nearly gave out at that point

Falling into Place

"No way in hell Blake. I am not apologizing I have my reaâ !" I tugged on the ropes they didn't budge, he straightened up I missed the heat of his body

"I guess we will just have to make this more intense for you to really get it." His voice was a growl but not in anger, it was lust filled and drove me nuts, I gasped as his body returned to press against mine his hands played with my breasts again as my back naturally arched against him my butt pushed back into him. I could tell I wasn't the only one being affected by the situation. "Is that you want Megan? You want more? You want me to give it to you harder, that pain to make all the other pain go away Is that what you want Megan?" I felt tears come to my eyes, because I was realizing what I had threatened to do, but I wasn't going to let him know his way got me there.

"Go to hell Blake" my voice was gravelly

"Nope not the right answer" He moved his hands quickly pushing down my Shorts and underwear before I even had a chance to react he moved forward his fingers caressed where I wanted him most.

"Admit you want it Megan" He groaned a little as his fingers dipped into me slightly, I felt my eyes roll back in my head

"Am I the only one standing here naked?" I tried to push back more on to his fingers but he pulled his hand away "Why should I admit anything?"

"Now now Megan don't try to turn this around" He chuckled I heard his zipper go down. My mind went completely blank he rubbed himself against me pushing a little. I closed my eyes and damn I wanted him inside of me more than anything The sound of his hand making contact with my now bare skin made the horses flinch, and I screamed loudly, I pulled away from him "Hell no" he shook his head he brought his hand down on the other cheek, I didn't scream this time it was a guttural moan, I wanted him more than I thought possible right now and I craved him. It was almost like he could read my mind as his hand softly stroked over my raw hot ass

"Come on Megan. Tell meâ ! tell me you want more and you want it nowâ ! Tell me Megan!" His voice was hard and loud, turning me on even more if that was possible, he was in control utterly and fully, and I felt safe in a strange way I knew he wasn't out to hurt me physically he was more than capable of it but he wouldn't, this wasn't being beaten this was an outlet for everything built up in me

"I ...I ... want more" I moaned " now Blake"

He grunted at that and I felt him enter and fill me fast no gentle easing this was here and now raw. His pace was relentless his hips moving against me. I moved against the rail, I was surprised it didn't snap in two. An animalistic urge took me over and all I could think is I wanted more I wanted to forget my past. He continued, with each withdrawal he alternated between slapping my cheek to stroking it lightly heightening the feelings. I felt like my head was going to explode as one hand tugged on one of my nipples and rolled it firmly between his finger and thumb.

"Damnâ !I... I am so close Blake..." I gasped as he slammed home again he wrapped his arm round my waist lifting me onto my toes pushing in at a whole new angle hitting right where he needed to inside of me His teeth grazed my neck

"Come for me Megan. Do it now" he murmured in my ear his other hand slipped lower and in between my legs to circle and rub me as he jack hammered his hips me triggering an orgasm like I'd never known "Good Girl". I screamed his name over and over, his movements became shorter and harder before he filled me to the

Falling into Place

hilt as his release was triggered, I could feel him twitching inside of me as he held me tightly back against him. I leaned over my shoulder and kissed him on the temple as he recovered his own breathingâ !â !â !â !

Chapter 72: Green eyed monster

I felt my knees buckle, Blake held his grip round my waist as he pulled out of me his free hand making quick work of the rope freeing my hands He fell down pulling me onto his lap cradling me to him

"Megan you okay" I nodded "Oh baby that was so...I...it was so..." He kissed my temples before he lifted my hands and rubbed his fingers over the red rope marks "Sorry I mean" he stammered

"It's okay I'm fine" I tipped my head to look at him "it was perfect, amazing, stunning, breathtaking..."

"Well yeah all that, But downright hot angry sexy. It has never been that good before" He chuckled

"I'm sorry" He frowned at me "for even thinking I was going to go back to James" I watched his jaw tighten

"After everything he did to you you'd go back to him?" it was so much of a pained question I reached up and put my hand against his face, He closed his eyes and lent into it "I felt sick to the stomach when I heard you say that" he murmured "And then to see how afraid Kain was for you" he opened his eyes and looked at me. "Please tell me you're not going to leave"

"I don't know" He shifted his weight under me so I was straddled over his lap facing him, his eyes darkened "I will promise I won't go back to James, you're right I couldn't go back to him after the things he did and made me do" I couldn't look at him.

"Come to bed with me, I don't want to talk about this naked in the barn" he pressed his lips to my forehead.

"I don't think my legs will work after what we just did" I sighed as I eased off his lap and found my shorts and shirt.

"Don't worry about that I just want to know you're safe with me here" I opened my mouth to say something "I know we have things to talk about" I looked at him over my shoulder he was zipping up his jeans "I want to tell you something"

"What?"

"When you're in my arms and in my bed" he walked over to me and in a fast move he bent and picked me up in his arms. He strode out of the barn with me I glanced over his shoulder toward the main house Joanne was standing with Sean and Reid watching.

"You're Momma looks fit to explode" I murmured

"Well she's going to have to get used to seeing me with you" Blake stopped walking and turned round to face the house as if in a defying gesture to her "Because it's how it's going to be" He adjusted me in his arms and turned back toward the bunk house.

"I don't want to"

"Don't even say it" he shook his head "I have a lot to apologize to you for" he stopped talking as he took the steps of the Bunk house some of the hands were sitting on the porch. One of them getting up to open the door for Blake he didn't even acknowledge them as he carried on up to his apartment he set my feet down and he opened the door. He took my hand and led me inside "you want a drink?"

Falling into Place

"Coffee would be good" I nodded

"Coffee does sound really good" he nodded walking over to the kitchen I followed him and lent on the door frame while he moved around in the kitchen

"Thank you" He put two mugs on the counter next to the coffee pot

"For what?"

"Stopping me, yelling at meâ I was so angry and scaredâ "he walked over to me and put his arms round me "I just thought if I left here you guys could get on with your lives and Kain and Jessi might have a shot at being a couple"

"Kain put his life on the line to get you away from that guyâ I get I don't know a lot of what happened and to be honest I don't want to. Everything you told me last night was more than I really can comprehend" Blake let go of me and walked back to the coffee pot and filled both of the cups. "Come on" he walked by me and over to the bed and put the cups in the nightstand, he put his hand out to me "Lets get comfortable" I came over to him he pulled back the covers and turned round and reached into a drawer and pulled out a t-shirt and handed it to me "as much as I want you naked again you're too distracting" I took the shirt and headed for the bathroom, I pushed the door closed and slipped out of my clothes I stood on tiptoe and looked through the mirror at my ass. It was bright red I bit my lip the tingling sensation as I touched it made me want Blake all over again. I pulled the t-shirt on over my head and walked out into the other room, Blake was sitting on the bed in just a pair of boxers his coffee cup in his hand. He looked up and smiled at me. "And I thought you were distracting when you were naked you look so good in my clothes" I felt my cheeks flame red I crawled on to the other side of the bed and looked at him. "So please tell me you're going to stay here in Wimberley?" He twisted on his side to face me. I chewed my lip "Meg"

"I don't know, people here think I'm some wild woman that wears heels and dances on a bar, has come here andâ I guess brought baggage she should have left behindâ Hell, look at all the talk when Kain showed up and it's no one's business but I was judged and assumptions were made and you did it as well"

"Hey I'm not denying I did but I did it for different reasons" Blake sat up against the head board and picked up my coffee and handed it to me "I defended you against a lot of the talk whether you choose to believe me or notâ but I did it because I was jealous of Kain and I really hated to watch you close the door of the old house each night knowing it's only go on bedroom and he'd be the one warming your bed, when I wanted to be the one in there with you. I hated the easy way you and he talk to each other and the way you both seem toâ well click" I nodded understanding for the first time how it looked to him "But now I get it he's your guardian angel, and the way you and he had to live to surviveâ I get it I'm still not his biggest fan but he saved you and I get to love you" I popped an eye brow "For once in my life I can tell someone other than my family I love them and I don't want you to go, I don't want to miss the chance it seems like we've been given Megâ I really don't" his brow was furrowed as he spoke to me "I Love you"â Iâ

Chapter 73: Resolve

****Okay Guys I'm leaving the Cowboy with his girl for now but I will be back with soooooo much drama for the four of them****

"You love me even after what I told you?" I put the cup down on the night stand next to me. I'd heard him tell Joanne that over the phone but I didn't know if that was just him trying to piss her off. "Even with the things I've done"

"I can't change your past. I can't do a single damn thing about what you went through" He put his cup down "But I can be here for you, I can help you move on and to get some sort of normal life backâ damn it Meg you were one hell of a nurse from what I saw and what you said about your job, do that again there are huge hospitals in San Antonio that would love to have you thereâ I don't want you to run away and to lose youâ I want you here with me and I'm damn sure Kain doesn't want you to far away from him" I looked down

"You need to know people might come looking for both Kain and I"

"I understood that as soon as you told me what Kain was and I saw the man you we're suppose to marry" He took a deep breath "well sweetheart I don't scare easily and hell if I can stand up to Kain, I can stand up to a rich man who is trying to hurt my girl" I looked at him the sincerity in his face made me cry "Oh damn what did I say" he pulled me into his arms I wrapped my arm over his chest and buried my face in the side of his neck.

"I thought you'd run, I thought my story was toâ" he stroked my hair and pulled my face up to meet his in a kiss that told me his feelings

"You think I'd be here with you now if I was to shocked by it" He wiped away the tears on one cheek with his thumb "Let me go get Kain and you need to tell him you're staying here with us and you're not going anywhere"

"I can't go anyway he shot my damn car" I sniffed "What about your Mom?" Blake got out of bed and grabbed his jeans

"I've told my mother that she either accepts the fact I'm in love with you or I walk away from here from the ranch from my job" he shrugged "She's got some apologizing to do to you and so does Seanâ hell I'm going to be making it up to you forever" his zipped up his jeans he walked to the door

"Blake" he looked round "I don't think I could have gone far" he frowned "I fell in love with you as well and I was trying to convince myself I hadn't" Blake all but ran across the room and pulled me off the bed into his arms and kissed me, he let me go onto the bed again

"I won't be long" he ran back to the door and down the stairs I flopped back and hugged my arms round myself curling into the pillow. I couldn't believe I'd just told him that but it was true I had fallen hard for him. I got out of bed and walked back into the kitchen taking my cup and refilling it. "Megâ Shit" Blakes voice came from the other room

"She's not gone far" Kain's voice joined Blakes

"No I was getting coffee" I stepped out of the kitchen. Blake seemed to slump a little and sigh "I told you I wasn't going anywhere" I felt small in the room with the two of them in there with me.

Falling into Place

Kain's jaw was hard set and his eyes seemed to burn into me as he folded his arms over his chest and leant on the table behind the couch.

"Why the hell would you even contemplate heading back to him?" Kain kept his eyes fixed on me "He forced you to have sex with other people so he could watchâ he used you like a fucking trophy Megan, He made you give up everything and everyone you knewâ he trapped you so you had no way out"

"I know but if it means you're safe and Blake and Jessi we're safe I'd do it"

"Makes you dumber than a box of damn rocks" Blake snapped sitting on the edge of the bed I looked at him "Meg he knows how to handle himself and don't underestimate this cowboy"

"It's not James you have to worry about" Kain's voice was hard edged "I am not supposed to just walk away there is one way out of my line of work and it involves a body bagâ you know that Meg"

"Damn" Blake pushed his hand through his hair

"I can disappear so people won't find meâ I will do that because you needed a chance Megan you needed a way out and all I wanted to do was give it to youâ I never expected to come here and fall in love and I might have to leave her behind if I get any sign they're coming for me, That's my choice for keeping her you and even him" Kain didn't even look at, Blake he just jabbed his finger in his direction "safeâ I didn't put everything on the line to get you out for damn shits and giggles Meg, I did it because I give a damn and you were worth itâ you are worth it"

"I'm sorry" I looked down "I was angry because of things that had been said and the way it seems to be panning out hereâ I know what it took for you to do what you did and get me away from himâ "

"All I want is for you not to run unless we all run together because from what he just said to me he's not going to let you leave without himâ !" a smirk played on Kain's lips "You found a good man Megan let him love you the way you're supposed to beloved and the rest we'll all deal with as we go on" He turned his head and looked at Blake "It might get rough, really rough and if you're not in all the way then don't string Her along, I've laid out everything to your Sister and she's with me all the way, I'll protect her until I don't breathe anymore, but I swear to you if you back out on Meg when it does get rough you won't know what hits you"

"Good job I'm not going to back out on her then isn't it" Blake got off the bed and walked over "I have her back as much as you do" Kain rubbed his hand over his jaw

'Kain" He looked at me "I trust Blake as much as I trust you" the slight pop of Kain's eye brow made me smile "I love him and we'll face who and what ever comes" Kain pushed off the table he was leaning on and walked over to me He dropped his hands before he cupped my face.

"I believe you" he kissed my cheek "I love ya girl"

"Love you too" I hugged him to me

"I'll let the two of youâ well I dread to think after the sounds from the barn" he looked at Blake "Get ready to fight because it will come" Blake nodded

"I'm ready" Kain kissed my forehead again and walked to the door

Falling into Place

"We're all going to have to deal with your Mom first" Kain chuckled as he closed the door behind him Blake walked over to me and held my hands

"I won't go anywhere Meg I promise you that"

"I know" he lifted my hand

"But this has to go" he tugged on my engagement ring "I hate to see it there' I looked down at it "You never know I might want to put something pretty on there one day"

"I'm not asking you to do that" I pulled the ring from my finger "all I want is to feel safe in your arms" he pulled me to him "I just want to start over"

"You really are something Megan Miller. You really are something special" He chuckled. He closed his eyes but still smiled when I leaned my head on his chest and answer him.

"So are you Blake Walker, so are you."

I knew deep down it was going to get really rough at some point, and things might not end well but I had a chance to be happy for at least a while and I was going to take it and hold it. I dropped the ring on to the table and pulled Blake toward the bed, I had a man that loved me in spite of everything I'd revealed to him and I was damn sure I'd never loved anyone like I loved himâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ !

Created from Booksie.com

Generated: 2013-05-20 11:16:27